FRENCH
Without a Teacher

ALLEN

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/frenchwithouttea0000phil

Drake's Practical Books for Home Study

FRENCH
Without a Teacher

SPECIALLY PLANNED FOR THOSE WHO
DESIRE A PRACTICAL WORKING
KNOWLEDGE OF THE LANGUAGE
FOR CONVERSATION AND
CORRESPONDENCE

BY

PHILIP SCHUYLER ALLEN
THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO
FREDERICK J. DRAKE & CO.
PUBLISHERS

Copyright 1919
By
Fred'k J. Drake & Co.

PREFACE

THIS BOOK is one of a series of new home-study courses in modern foreign languages. There has been a persistent demand for new practical books of this kind, especially for the purposes of conversation and correspondence. The position of America as a world power makes it imperative that we acquire, for commercial, industrial and social reasons, a working knowledge of foreign languages. No attempt has been made to teach the literature of the language, but all the fundamentals are presented in such a manner that any one who will apply himself with moderate earnestness can easily become proficient in a short time.

Professor Allen says: "Bring yourself to obey the directions given everywhere throughout this book as if they were the military commands of your superior officer. In that way you will learn very fast. There is nothing in the following pages which has not been tried out a hundred times. I have had twenty-five years' experience in teaching foreign languages. I am offering you herewith the net result of the best of that long experience. The learning of a foreign language is not a science, nor yet is it a mechanical thing. It is an art. It should be undertaken with high resolve and pursued with ardor."

The lessons are carefully graded, and the student is led by easy steps to a thorough knowledge of the language. Grammar is usually the stumbling block for students of any foreign language. In this work the essential facts of grammar are incorporated in the exercises in such a way as to make them as easy to acquire as the vocabulary. The method of repetition employed is a most interesting feature. The student cannot fail to see how each word is used and correctly used. Constant hints as to the best method of grasping and mastering peculiar constructions and vocabulary are features of no less practical importance.

Master each lesson throughly and review as directed and success is yours — you cannot fail.

THE PUBLISHERS.

CONTENTS

	To The Student	11
	Brief Review of English Grammar	12
	Introduction	21
I.	Pronunciation	31
II.	Plural of Nouns	36
III.	Pronouns	33
IV.	Word Drill	41
V.	Adjectives	43
VI.	Review	47
VII.	Possessive Adjectives	48
VIII.	Present Tense of the Verb **être**, *to be*	52
IX.	Present Tense of the Verb **avoir**	56
X.	Idioms With **avoir**	59
XI.	Questions	61
XII.	Review	62
XIII.	Present Tense of Regular Verbs of the First Conjugation	64
XIV.	Pronouns	68
XV.	Imperative Forms	71
XVI.	Present Tense of Irregular Verb **aller**, *to go*	73
XVII.	Present Tense of **voir**, *to see*	76
XVIII.	Reading, Vocabulary, Prepositions	78
XIX.	Present Tense of Verb **venir**, *to come*	81
XX.	Present Tense of **vouloir, pouvoir, savoir**	83

XXI.	Present Tense of **manger** and **boire**	86
XXII.	Numerals	89
XXIII.	Present Tense of **partir, dire, faire, écrire**	92
XXIV.	Present Perfect Tense	93
XXV.	Verbs That Take The Auxiliary **être**	96
XXVI.	Review, Verb Drill	100
XXVII.	Adjectives	101
XXVIII.	Time of Day	105
XXIX.	En	109
XXX.	Verbs	111
XXXI.	Imperfect Tense (Continued)	115
XXXII.	Verbs—Future Tense	118
XXXIII.	Numerals — Names of Months — Days of Week	121
XXXIV.	The Indefinite **on**	124
XXXV.	The Conditional Mood	127
XXXVI.	**Y — venir de**	130
XXXVII.	The Past Definite Tense	134
XXXVIII.	Pronouns (Review) Vocabulary	137
XXXIX.	Reflexive Verbs	140
XL.	Disjunctive Forms of Personal Pronouns	145
XLI.	Present Participles	147
XLII.	The Impersonal **falloir.** The Subjunctive	149
XLIII.	The Imperative. The Subjunctive (Continued)	152
XLIV.	Impersonal Verbs	154
XLV.	Reading Lesson. La Guerre	156
XLVI.	Travel, Vocabulary	158
XLVII.	Synopsis of Verbs	162
XLVIII.	Exercise in Vocabulary	165
XLIX.	Review of Participles	167
L.	Review of Past Definites	169
LI.	Review of Past Tenses	170

LII. News From Three Fronts 171
LIII. Newspaper French 173
LIV. Newspaper French (Continued) 175

APPENDIX 179
FRENCH–ENGLISH VOCABULARY . . . 221

TO THE STUDENT

The study of a foreign language takes time, patience, and energy. There are many difficulties to be overcome in learning even a small part of a language. You cannot reason your way to many conclusions in a language course — use your memory instead. Memorize words and groups of words. Memorize verb-forms and model sentences as given in your books. Make your study a pleasure, a recreation, a play-time.

Go through each lesson in a painstaking way. From the beginning keep yourself in the right state of mind. Do not waste your time and energy wondering why they pronounce in such an odd fashion. When you think that spelling and pronunciation go in wildly different directions, like a team of colts, remember the English *tough*, *through*, and *thorough*; also the plurals of *house* and *mouse*, and resume your task with meekness. If you think that the Frenchman slurs too many letters, try to imagine the feelings of an educated foreigner who hears paragons of American culture say, "Cha doin'?" when they mean: "What are you doing?"

Do not expect to *read* the book through and know much of what is in it. Set yourself only a small task for each day. Knowledge is a growth and cannot be hastened. Review constantly. Review in the street-car, in the cushions of the limousine, on the train. Nobody can learn a language for you.

Use all your ingenuity to think of ways to test and exercise your knowledge of what you have studied. Recite to yourself. When you teach yourself you have

the very best teacher in the world. Fasten written lists of French words and phrases to the walls of your room, where you will see them when you retire at night and when you wake in the morning. Make lists of verb-forms. If you conquer the regular and the irregular verbs of a language — even in the ordinarily used tenses only — you have won a decisive victory.

When you do not feel like studying French, read books about France and the French. Let it all soak in — you are losing no time. If you follow these suggestions honestly, you will learn French — failure is impossible.

Brief Review of English Grammar

Before one studies the ways of words in a foreign language, it is most desirable that he review the grammatical terms and their definitions as used in English. The following sketch is a short survey of the terms in use for English grammar:

I. THE SENTENCE

1. A Sentence is a group of words expressing a complete thought: Bees make honey. The girls are happy.

a. A Declarative Sentence makes a statement: The girls are happy.

b. An Interrogative Sentence asks a question: Are the girls happy?

c. An Imperative Sentence expresses a command or an entreaty: Boys, study diligently.

d. An Exclamatory Sentence expresses strong feeling: Just see what fools we are!

2. Sentences consist of two parts: (My father is an old man).

a. The Subject represents the thing of which something is asserted: My father.

b. The Predicate makes an assertion regarding the subject: is an old man.

3. The Object of a transitive verb names the person or thing that receives the action: The woman spins the yarn.

a. The Direct Object names the thing that receives the action directly: He paid the money.

b. The Indirect Object names the thing to or for which the action was undertaken: He paid *me* the money.

c. Predicate Nouns complete the meaning of some intransitive verbs: The lieutenant became a captain.

d. Predicate Adjectives complete the meaning of some intransitive verbs: Sugar tastes sweet.

4. A Simple Sentence contains but one statement, question, or command: Washington's army was composed of raw recruits.

a. A Compound Sentence joins together two independent statements, questions, or commands: Washington's army was composed of raw recruits, but he was never known to despair.

b. A Complex Sentence contains one independent proposition and one or more dependent clauses: He knows that the world can get on without him.

c. An Independent Clause needs nothing to complete its meaning: William saved his money.

d. A Dependent Clause depends upon another statement, which it qualifies or restricts: William saved his money, that he might go to college.

e. A Clause takes its particular name from the part of speech for which it is used.

A Noun Clause is: I heard *that the train was wrecked.*

An Adjective Clause is: the boy *who was sick* went home.

An Adverb Clause is: I knew the poem *when I was a child.*

II. PARTS OF SPEECH

5. A Noun is a word used as the name of a person, place, or thing: man, Chicago, love, table.

a. A Common Noun is the name of a class of persons, places, or things: girl, lake, newspaper.

b. A Proper Noun is the name of a particular person, place, or thing: Longfellow, Illinois, December.

c. A Collective Noun is one applied to a collection of objects of the same kind: family, regiment, school, herd.

d. An Abstract Noun is the name of a quality, condition, or relation: flavor, strength, honor.

6. A Pronoun is a word used instead of a noun: he, she, it, who, which, this, that.

a. A Personal Pronoun is one that shows by its forms whether it is in the first, second, or third person: I, me, we, us; thou, you; he, him, she, her, it, they.

b. A Relative Pronoun connects its clause with a preceding noun or pronoun: who, which, what, that.

c. An Interrogative Pronoun asks a question: who? which? what?

d. A Demonstrative Pronoun points out objects definitely, *this* and *these* referring to things near, *that* and *those* to things more distant.

e. An Indefinite Pronoun points out objects indefinitely: all, any, each, either, neither, few, many, none, one, other, another, some, several, such.

f. A Reflexive Pronoun is used in the predicate as a repetition of the subject of a sentence: myself, yourself, himself.

g. A Reciprocal Pronoun implies reciprocal action or relation: each other, one another.

7. An Adjective is a word used to describe, or to limit the meaning of a noun or pronoun: beautiful, yonder.

a. A Descriptive Adjective denotes the quality of an object: a green apple, a beautiful picture.

b. A Limiting Adjective either denotes number (quantity) or merely points out an object without describing it: this man, yonder hill, the house.

c. The following are limiting adjectives, if used with a noun:

The definite article: the.

The indefinite article: a, an.

Interrogative adjectives: which, what.

Demonstrative adjectives: this, these, that, those.

Possessive adjectives: my, thy, your, his, her.

Indefinite adjectives: some, all, many.

Numerals—Cardinals: one, two, three; Ordinals: first, second, third.

8. A Verb is a word which asserts action, existence, or state (condition): birds sing, God is, mother rests.

a. A Transitive Verb is one that requires an object to complete its meaning: he learned his lesson.

b. An Intransitive Verb is one which is complete in itself: the wind blows, I shall go.

c. A Regular Verb is one that forms its past tense and past participle by adding –ed or –d: love, loved, loved.

d. An Irregular Verb is one that does not form its past tense and past participle by adding –ed or –d: sing, sang, sung.

e. An Auxiliary Verb is one which helps the conjugation of other verbs: we have seen, we shall see.

f. An Impersonal Verb occurs only in the third person singular. *it* is always the subject of such a verb: it rains, it snows.

9. An Adverb is a word that modifies the meaning of a verb, adjective, or other adverb: I meet my friend daily, the winter is extremely cold, they were very severely injured.

a. An Adverb of Time answers the question *when*: he often goes.

b. An Adverb of Place answers the question *where*: flowers do not grow up there.

c. An Adverb of Manner answers the question *how*: we left the room sadly and slowly.

d. An Adverb of Degree answers the question *how much* or *how little*: the child is rather dull.

10. A Conjunction is a word used to connect words, phrases, or clauses: I was sick and in prison.

a. A Coördinating Conjunction is a connective which joins words, phrases, or statements that are alike in rank: so, or, but, and, also, yet, nor.

b. A Subordinating Conjunction is one that connects a dependent clause with the principal (or independent) clause: he is strong, although he is old.

11. A Preposition is a word used before a noun or pronoun to explain its relation to another word in the sentence: a house with a piazza, she wrote with a pen, she cared for her needs, he is free from pain.

12. An Interjection is a word to express strong feeling, and not related to any other word in the sentence: Ah! bitter chill it was.

III. MODIFICATION

13. Many words are changed in form to represent slight changes in the ideas expressed. Such derived forms or modifications, are called inflections.

14. The Modifications of a noun are number, gender, case, and person.

a. Singular Number denotes but one object: boy, man, house.

b. Plural Number denotes more than one object: boys, men, houses.

c. Masculine Gender refers to males: uncle, husband, lad.

d. Feminine Gender refers to females: aunt, wife, lassie.

e. Neuter Gender denotes lack of sex: flower, air, book.

f. Common Gender refers to either males or females: parent, child, infant, baby, descendant.

g. Case indicates the three relations that a noun or pronoun may hold to other words in a sentence: subject, object, possessor.

h. The Nominative Case is used for the subject of a verb: life is what we make it.

i. The Genitive (or Possessive) Case is used to denote ownership: the boy's book.

j. The Objective Case is used for the object of a transitive verb or of a preposition: he commanded the army, mother spoke to the teacher.

k. Person is a distinction of nouns and pronouns which shows whether they represent the speaker, the person spoken to, or the person or thing spoken of.

l. Nouns are usually in the third person, because they are almost always names of persons or things spoken of. Occasionally, expressions containing nouns of the first or second person are used: I, Abraham Lincoln, President of the United States; you, Peter Jackson, go and learn your lessons.

15. The Modification of Adjectives and Adverbs is called comparison. It is used to indicate the relative degree of quality or quantity in the objects compared.

a. The Positive Degree simply names the quality or quantity of one or more objects: the road is rough.

b. The Comparative Degree denotes a greater or less degree: rougher, less rough, larger, smaller.

c. The Superlative Degree denotes the greatest or least degree: roughest, least rough, largest, smallest.

16. The Modifications of the Verb are Person, Number, Tense, Voice, and Mood. A Verb takes its person and number from its subject.

a. Tenses are forms of verbs which indicate the time to which the state or action is referred. There are six tenses.

b. The Present Tense refers to present time: I am.

c. The Past Tense refers to past time: I was.

d. The Present Perfect refers to action completed in the present: I have been.

e. The Past Perfect refers to action completed in past time: I had been.

f. The Future refers to future time: I shall be.

g. The Future perfect refers to action completed in future time: I shall have been.

h. Voice is a form of the verb which indicates whether its subject names the doer or the receiver of the action.

i. The Active Voice shows that the subject names the doer: he hit the man.

j. The Passive Voice shows that the subject names the receiver of the action: the man was hit by him.

k. Mood is the manner in which verbs assert action, being, or state.

l. The Indicative Mood is used to declare a fact: the wind blows, does the wind blow?

m. The Subjunctive Mood is used to denote a contingency, and to express a wish or an unreal condition: if he ask, it will be granted; would we were there!, had he been present we should not have been defeated.

n. The Imperative Mood expresses a command or an entreaty: follow me.

o. The Infinitive names the simple action or state. It is either Present or Past: to go, to have gone, to be, to have been. It may be used as a noun: It is forbidden to sing and dance.

p. The Participle is a verbal adjective.

q. The Present Participle expresses the action as in progress: singing, dancing, playing.

r. The Past Participle expresses the action as over: sung, danced, played.

s. The Past Perfect Participle expresses the action as done with before the time indicated by the rest of the sentence: having deceived his partner, the merchant failed.

INTRODUCTION

Pronunciation

§1. The pronunciation of French is fairly uniform and systematic — more so than the pronunciation of English. Once learned, the system of French pronunciation occasions no great difficulties.

§2. The French has the same letters as English, but uses *k* and *w* only in foreign words. Pronounce the consonants as in English.

The sounds of French vowels are indicated below. If you know another foreign language, such as Spanish, Italian, or German, its vowel sounds will help you to learn the sounds of French vowels. Vowel sounds are essentially the same in all these languages.

Sounds of French Letters

§3. *A* has the sound of *a* in *aha*. Some Frenchmen sound it like *a* in *hat*. Suit yourself. The sound of *a* is as given above, whether it is written *a*, *à*, or *â*. These accent marks do not change the sound of *a*. Neither do they indicate emphasis, stress, or accent as we understand it in English.

Pronounce **a, â, à, ça, çà, ha, la, ma, sa, ta, va, Paris** (*s* silent), **Calais** (*s* silent), **antique, atlas, acte, absinthe** (*h* silent), **chapeau.**

§4. *A* before final *n* has a nasal sound like *ah* pronounced very rapidly. Pronounce **an, Renan, d'Artagnan, plan.**

§5. *C* has two sounds — like the English *k* and *ss*. *C* is pronounced like *k*. Here it follows without exception a rule seen in many English words. In English this sound of *c* is found when the *c* is followed by a consonant or by *a*, *o*, or *u*.

Pronounce **cabaret, camouflage, canal, canard, cabriolet, cache, caisson, cantine, canton, cap, capital, capote, Clemenceau, car, corps.**

§6. *C*, before *e*, *i*, and *y*, has the sound of *s* in *sap*. Pronounce **cerise, ce, cette, cet, cellulose, celtique, César, Cicéro.**

This sound may also be written *ç* before *a* and *o*.

E has four sounds.

§7. (1) *E* has the sound of *a* in *hate* when it has the acute accent. The double vowel *ée* has the same sound as *é*. Pronounce **bé, dé, fiancé, fiancée, hé, étude, entrée, débutante, décolletée.**

§8. *E* has this same sound in words of one syllable ending in silent *s*. Pronounce **des, mes, les, ses, tes, ces** (§6.), etc.

§9. (2) *E* has the sound of *e* in *met*, whether it is printed *è*, *ê*, or *e*. Pronounce **messieurs, merci, belle, soubrette, decimo, permettez, ennemi, bête, fête, tête.**

§10. (3). Some people in the United States pronounce *e* in the first syllable of *envelope*, not with the sound of *e* in *men*, but with a sound like *ah*. This sound of *e* occurs frequently in French and is called the nasal sound. The letter *a* has a nasal sound also. See §4. The student will try to make it nasal, as in the English word *envelope*. Pronounce **pense, enfant, A-mi-ens** (*s* silent).

§11. (4). Sometimes we pronounce *the thing: thuh thing*. The sound of *the* as in *thuh* is the sound of *e*

without any mark of accent at the end of a French word of one syllable. Pronounce, making them rhyme with *thuh*, **de, ce, le, me, ne, te, se, ce.**

In words of more than two letters final *e* without a mark of accent is not pronounced. Pronounce **France, garage, globe, camouflage, garde, cantine.** *E* before *r*, not final, has the sound of *e* in *terror*.

G has two sounds.

§12. (1). *G* has the same sound as in English. Pronounce **globe, glacé, Grand-Pré, Gallipoli, Gambetta, Gounod** (*d* silent), **gable.**

§13. (2). *G*, before *e*, *i*, or *y*, has the sound of *zh*, like *s* in *pleasure*. Pronounce **garage, camouflage, gendarme, général, géologie, gyroscope, rouge.**

§14. *Gu* has the first sound of *g*, *u* being silent. Pronounce **guide, guitare.**

§15. *H* is generally silent at the beginning of a word or syllable, as in the English words *honor*, *herb*, *dishonor*. Otherwise it is pronounced as in English.

§16. When initial *h* is sounded, it is marked in vocabularies in this book with a ', thus, **la 'hache.** Pronounce **'halo, 'halte, 'harpe, herbe, hôtel, horizon, humble.**

§17. *I* is pronounced like *i* in *ravine*, *police*, *marine*, *Racine*. In some words *i* is printed *î*, but the sound is the same. Pronounce **ri, si, ni, ci, ici, ça ira, mine, bride, cuisine, dînette, dîne, fine, pire, pic, fiancé.**

§18. *I* before final *n* has a sound like that of *an* in *bank*. Pronounce **clin, pin, chemin, fin.**

§19. *J* is pronounced like *z* in *azure* or like *s* in *pleasure*, that is, like French *g* before *e*, *i*, or *y*. See §13. Pronounce **je, Jacob, Jacques, Joffre, Jules, Jusserand, jardin, jabot.**

§20. Sometimes *l* or *ll* after *i* has no sound, or more accurately, a trace of the sound of *y*.

Thus **paille** rhymes with *tie*,
fille " " *tea*,
rail " " *tie*.

§21. All words in which the *l* or *ll* is silent are marked with a † when first given in this book. Pronounce **billet doux, La Marseillaise.**

§22. *N* is pronounced as in English except that final *n* is silent and gives the nasal sound to the preceding vowel. See §§4 and 10. Pronounce the following words: **an, en, chemin, on, un, Verdun, bonbon, pompon.**

§23. *O* has two sounds.

(1) *O* is pronounced like *o* in *hotel*. Pronounce **hôtel, hôte, 'holà.**

§24. (2). *O* has also a shorter, sharper sound almost like the *o* in *month*. The difference is that there is more of the *o* and less of the *u* in it. Pronounce **Foch, bonne, combat** (*t* silent), **costume.**

§25. *Qu* is pronounced like *k*. Pronounce **bouquet, croquet, croquette, Marquette, coquette.**

§26. *R*, correctly pronounced, has a sound that the English does not have. The student may pronounce it as in English, merely trilling it. The French trill.

§27. *Er* at the end of a word has the sound of *a* in *hate*. Pronounce **parler, officier.**

§28. *S* has two sounds, both like the English sharp, hissing *s*, and *z*.

S has the sound of *s* in *six*. Pronounce **sabot, sabotage, sardine, sandale, sage.**

§29. *S* has the sound of *z*. This is generally when it stands between vowels or when it is carried over from

the end of a word to the beginning of the next word, for example, **les actes** [lay zact], **maison, liaison.**

§30. *U* has two sounds. (1) The first sound of *u* is not heard in English. It is like the German *ü*. Those who do not know it from this may pronounce it like *ee* The sound *ee* is made with the corners of the mouth far apart. If the same sound is made with the lips in a position to whistle, the sound is exactly the French *u*. But be careful to make only one sound. Place the lips and then make the sound.

Pronounce **du, mu, nu, vu, lu, pu, su, connu, inconnu, revue, poilu.**

§31. (2) *U* before *n* at the end of a word has a sound like *u* in *uh-huh*, the colloquial word for *yes*. Pronounce **un, d'un, l'un, Verdun.**

§32. *W* is pronounced like *v*.

§33. *Y* is pronounced like *i*.

§34. *Z* is pronounced as in English. *Ez* at the end of a word is pronounced like *-er*. See §27. Pronounce **parlez** [par-lay], **nez** [nay], **comprenez.**

Diphthongs

§35. *Ai* is pronounced like *ai* in *fail*. Pronounce **au fait, saison, La Marseillaise, Aisne, Calais, Aix.**

§36. *Ai* before *l* or *ll* is sometimes pronounced like *ai* in *aisle*. Pronounce **bataille, bataillon.**

§37. *Au* is pronounced like *o* in *note*. Pronounce **au fait, Maubeuge.**

§38. *Eau* is pronounced like *au* above. Pronounce **beau, château, eau, Eau Claire, Rochambeau, Clemenceau.**

§39. *Ay* is pronounced like *ai* above. Pronounce **La Fayette.**

§40. *Ei* is pronounced like *a* in *prays*. Pronounce **seize, treize, La Marseillaise,** making them rhyme with *prays*. Some make them rhyme with *says*.

§41. *Eu* should rhyme with *u* in *purr*. Pronounce **peur, meure, demeure, beurre, liqueur, Maubeuge.**

§42. *Oi* is pronounced like *wah*. Pronounce **croix** (*x* silent), **Bois, Oise, Boisé, toi, moi, soi, loi, roi, joie, voisine.**

§43. *Ou* is pronounced like *oo* in *boot*. Pronounce **sou, ou, oui, boue, cou, d'où, mou, pou, tout, vous, nous, chou, Louis.**

§44. *Oeu* is pronounced like *eu* above. Pronounce **cœur** like *cur*.

§45. Pronounce *oy* like *oi* in *boil*. Pronounce **voyage, voyons, voyez.**

Nasal Sounds

§46. The sound of nasal *a* is found in *-am*, *-an*, *-em*, *-en*, *-ent*, at the end of words. It is like the sound of *en* in *envelope* already mentioned. See §10.

Pronounce with this sound of *a* **an, pan, chambre, enfant** (both syllables nasal), **empire, membre, commencement.**

§47. Nasal *i* appears in, *-in*, *-im*, *-ain*, *-aim*, *-ein*, *in-*, and *im-*, and has the sound of *an* in *bank*. Thus **cinq** is pronounced *sank*, *q* being silent.

Nasal *-om* and *-on* are like the *on* in *honk*, but not like the *onk*. Omit the *k*. Pronounce **bonbon, non, nom.**

§48. Nasal *-um* and *-un* are pronounced like the *un* in *punk*. Pronounce **un, brun, parfum** (*m* like *n*), **Verdun.** Nasal sounds occur at the end of words. Later the student may give attention to them in words at the end of syllables.

Compound Consonants

Ch has two sounds.

§49. (1). *Ch* is like *sh*. Pronounce **château, chapeau, machine, charade.**

(2). *Ch* in some words is like *k*. Pronounce **chaos, écho, orchestre.**

§50. *Gn* is like *ny* in *canyon*. Pronounce **mignon.**

§51. *Th* is pronounced like *t*. Pronounce **théâtre, thé, Thiers** (*s* silent).

Final Consonants

§52. Final consonants are generally silent, but final *c, f, l, r,* are generally pronounced. In the verb-ending *-er, r* is silent. Pronounce **parler, parlez,** to rhyme with *say*.

Linking (Liaison)

§53. If two words standing together in a sentence are closely connected in meaning, the first one ending in a consonant and the second beginning with a vowel, they are pronounced as one word. But some say that the final consonant is "carried over" to the next word.

Many remember the senseless sentence from Mother Goose:—"Can't a goat eat ivy, can't a mare eat oats?" It shows linking, and from it the student can learn what linking is.

If one reads the sentence rapidly, it becomes *Can ta go tea tivy, can ta ma rea toats*? Notice that we link by carrying over the final consonant sound of one word to the first syllable of the next. Pronounce **un animal** [uh nanimal].

Accent

§54. All syllables of a French word, excepting those ending in silent *e*, must be pronounced distinctly, with

equal stress (no accent on any syllable, or a uniform stress on all), except for a slight raising of the voice on the last one sounded."

§55. Accent marks do not indicate emphatic syllables or stress of voice. Do not try to accent French words. Pronounce them.

Elision

§56. Before a word beginning with a vowel (or silent *h*) the final *e* of **le, de, je, me, se, te** is dropped and replaced with an apostrophe.

Pronounce **l'animal, j'aime, m'aimez-vous, s'assied-il, t'aime-t-elle.**

§57. So also the *a* of *la*. Pronounce **l'Anne, l'encre, l'entrée.**

§58. The *i* of *si* is dropped before *il* or *ils*. Pronounce **s'il veut, s'il vous plaît.**

Silent Letters

§59. *E* without an accent mark is frequently silent in French. There are many silent *e's* in English, for example in the following words: *commencement, easement, placement, peace, place.*

Pronounce the French words **race, petite, soubrette, coquette, plume, humble, La Place, Seine, Marne, Oise, Bastille.** The student will be pleased to know that a nasal sound never precedes a final silent *e*.

§60. At the end of words *d, s, t,* also *r* and *z* (preceded by *e*) are generally silent.

Pronounce **sied** (two syllables), **parler, pas, tas, bas, part, quart, tort, fort.**

Accent Marks

§61. French uses three accent marks, the acute (´) the grave (`), and the circumflex (^). Notice that in

every instance the mark is on a vowel, not on a syllable. *These marks do not indicate stress or emphasis.* No syllable of a French word is emphasized more than another. Do not try to "accent" any syllable. Try to pronounce all syllables conscientiously. Do not slight syllables as we do in English.

The table given below shows the vowels and diphthongs with their accents. We find

UNACCENTED	ACUTE	GRAVE	CIRCUMFLEX
a		à	â
e	é	è	ê
i			î
o			ô
u		ù	û
ai			aî
oi			oî
ou		où	oû

E is the only letter in which the accent marks indicate a difference in sound: *é* is pronounced like *a* in *hate*, *è* and *ê* like *e* in *met*.

FRENCH
Without a Teacher

LESSON I

PRONUNCIATION

In learning a foreign language, there is no way to avoid pronouncing the words. Even if you had no hope of learning to speak the language, and your only purpose in studying it were to learn to read it, you would find yourself pronouncing the words somehow, — or you would never learn them. The sooner you learn to pronounce the words, and can do it easily, the sooner your mind will be free for other things.

Read carefully the explanation of French pronunciation given in sections 1—61. Refer to these sections whenever you are in doubt as to the proper pronunciation of a new word. Begin every lesson by studying your new vocabulary until you feel sure how you should pronounce each word, and then pronounce the words aloud over and over. By way of review read aloud, in your very best style, the French sentences in at least the two preceding lessons. Then read aloud the French sentences in the advance lesson. Never mumble: pronounce clearly and distinctly.

In the earlier lessons the words have been respelled for you, in a way that should suggest the proper sound of the word. (In this respelling, the letters represent

the ordinary English sounds with which you are familiar.)

Pronounce the words in the list given below:

le [luh]; *e* (without an accent mark) at the end of a word or syllable has the sound of *e* in *her*, but keep the *r* sound out.

la [lah] as in *hoopla*, *trala*, *Giroflé-Girofla*.

le portrait [luh por-tray]; trill the *r's*; final *t* silent.

le lit [luh lee]; *t* is silent.

le livre [luh lee-vr]; *e* is silent.

la chaise [lah shezz]; rhyme with *says*.

la porte [lah porte]; trill the *r*; *e* silent.

la fenêtre [lah fuh-nett-tr]; for the sound of *e* see section 9; final *e* silent.

la photographie [lah fo-to-grah-fee]; *a* like *a* in *father*; *e* silent; *i* like *ee*.

la table [lah tah-bl]; *e* silent; you know the expression *table d'hôte* [tah-bl dote.] The *a* may also correctly have sound of *a* in *hat*.

la lampe [lah lahm-p]; *e* silent.

voici [vwah-see]. We have this sound of *oi* [wah] in **boudoir, reservoir, escritoire, répertoire.**

voilà [vwah-lah]; -la is exactly like **la** above.

un [uh]; a grunting sound, with *u* pronounced as in *fun*. Authorities give *n* as silent in this word.

une [een]; the respelling is as accurate as the repertoire of English sounds permits; correct it by reference to section 30. Note that the *n*, which is final in *un*, and therefore silent, has its sound re-

stored by addition of silent *e*.

ici [ee-see]

ou [oo]

où [oo]; pronounced exactly like the preceding.

là [lah] pronounced exactly like **la.**

est [eh]; *e* sounded as *e* in *net*, though you will always think you hear the sound of *a* in *fate*; *st* silent.

Silent Letters. After your study of the above list, what are your conclusions about the sound of final *e*? about the sounds of final consonants?

Pronounce **la** exactly like **là.** Pronounce **ou** exactly like **où.** What do these words mean? How can we tell from the printed page which is which? What is the use of the accent marks?

VOCABULARY

le (masculine form)	the	**un** (masculine)	a, an
le portrait	portrait	**une** (feminine)	a, an
le lit	bed	**ici** (adverb)	here
le livre	book	**voici** (adverb)	here is,
la (feminine form)	the		here are
la chaise	chair	**là** (adverb)	there
la porte	door	**voilà** (adverb)	there is,
la fenêtre	window		there are
la photographie	picture	**ou** (conjunction)	or
la table	table	**où** (adverb)	where
la lampe	lamp	**est**	is

You now know a few French words. So long as they are words, — four or five letters on a printed page, — they are of little use to you. Can you pronounce them? Then they are a little more valuable. Do they mean anything to you? When you say **la fenêtre,** do you think of a window, — a real, true window, the window

in your room? Can you train yourself to the point where you will think **la fenêtre** whenever you see any window?

Any device that will help you to connect the word with the thing it stands for is worth while. Buy a box of tags or of gummed labels. Fasten them to every article that you own as soon as you learn the French name for that article. Write this name on the tag in good, clear letters. If you like, indicate the pronunciation on the tag. Then, every time you see the article, think of it by its French name.

Say to yourself (aloud):

Voici le lit. [vwah-see luh lee]
Voilà la porte. [vwah-lah lah port]
Voici une chaise. [vwah-see een shezz]
Voici une lampe. [vwah-see een lahmp]
Voici la table. [vwah-see lah tah-bl]
Voilà un portrait. [vwah-lah uh pour-tray]
Voilà une photographie. [vwah-lah een fo-toh-grah-fee]
Voici un livre. [vwah-see uh lee-vr]

Do you know what you have been saying? If you do not, find out.

Gender

You have learned nine nouns. Examine the list. You will notice that every noun is the name of a *thing*, and in English would therefore be in the neuter gender. In French, however, some nouns are masculine, and the rest are feminine. The French has no neuter gender. As in English, nouns referring to males are masculine, nouns referring to females are feminine; but nouns referring to things are some masculine and some feminine, haphazard. There is no labor-saving

system by which we can learn their genders by groups. We must learn the gender of each noun individually, — that is, noun by noun. Students must accustom themselves, for instance, to the idea that the word for *window* is feminine; for *bed*, masculine.

With masculine nouns the definite article *the* has the form **le** and the indefinite article *a* or *an* has the form **un**. With feminine nouns the definite article is **la**, the indefinite article is **une**. (If you label things about you, put the correct article on the tag. It will help you to remember the gender of the noun.)

EXERCISE

Où est la lampe? [oo eh lah lahmp] Where is the lamp?
La lampe est ici. [lah lahmp eh tee-see] The lamp is here.

or

Voici la lampe! [vwah-see lah lahmp] Here is the lamp!
La lampe est là. [lah lahmp eh lah] The lamp is there.

or

Voilà la lampe! [vwah-lah lah lahmp] There is the lamp!
Voilà une lampe! [vwah-lah een lahmp] There is a lamp!

Answer each of the following questions in three different ways; using **voici, voilà,** and **est**:

Où est le livre? [oo eh luh lee-vr]
Où est la photographie? [oo eh lah foh-toh-grah-fee]
Où est le lit? [oo eh luh lee]
Où est la porte? [oo eh lah port]
Où est le portrait? [oo eh luh por-tray]
Où est la fenêtre? [oo eh lah fuh-nett-tr]
Où est la chaise? [oo eh lah shezz]

When you have reached this point, rest! A language must be taken in small doses.

LESSON II

PLURAL OF NOUNS

The nouns that you learned in Lesson I were all singular, — you were speaking of just one thing in each case. All that you have to do to make these nouns plural is to add *-s* to the singular. This *-s* is not pronounced. The plural therefore, though spelled differently from the singular, is pronounced exactly the same.

The indefinite article **un, une** has of course no plural form.

The definite article **le, la,** when used before plural nouns, is **les.** Notice that the singular has the masculine form **le** and the feminine form **la,** but the plural has for both genders but the one form **les** [lay].

the windows	**les fenêtres** [lay fuh-nett-tr]
the beds	**les lits** [lay lee]
the chairs	**les chaises** [lay shezz]
the books	**les livres** [lay lee-vr]

Pronounce carefully **le, la, les,** making the difference in the sounds of the three words unmistakable.

The singular of the definite article written before a noun beginning with a vowel or a silent *h* is written **l'**, not **le** or **la.** (As the form l' does not help you to know the gender, learn the gender of such nouns with care. In this book they are marked *m.* or *f.*)

Study the following French words. Remember, as in Lesson I, that you must carefully study how to pronounce each word, and then pronounce it till it no longer requires an effort. Try to associate the word with some definite object. If it is **l'arbre** (*m.*) that you are learning, go to your window and choose a tree to think of

when you see or hear or write **l'arbre.** Then try to get to the point where not only do you think of a tree when you see the word **l'arbre,** but whenever you see a tree — any tree — you think at once **l'arbre.** Soon French words will buzz in your head when you go to sleep, you will wake up in the morning with French words and phrases haunting you, — and you will begin to know French.

In the pronunciation of the plurals given below you will notice linking. See §53 for the explanation. Linking is not compulsory in French, but you should use it regularly. The opportunity for linking comes when a word ends in a consonant and the word immediately following begins with a vowel sound. (A word beginning with a silent *h* begins with a vowel sound.)

VOCABULARY

l'arbre [lar-br] *m.*	tree	**les arbres** [lay zar-br]
la couverture [coo-vair-teer]	blanket	**les couvertures**
l'encre [lahn-cr] *f.*	ink	**les encres** [lay zahn-cr]
l'homme [lumm] *m.*	man	**les hommes** [lay zumm]
la chambre [sham-br]	room	**les chambres**
la maison [may-zon]	house	**les maisons** see §47
le jardin [zhar-dan(k)]	garden	**les jardins** see §47
la femme [fam-m]	woman	**les femmes**
†**la fille** [fee-yuh *or* fee]	girl	**les filles** see §20
sur (prep.) [seer]	on, onto	
dans (prep.) [dan(k)] §46 (*s* silent)	in, into	

The verb *is* is **est** [eh].

The verb *are* is **sont** [son], see §47.

Do not use **est** or **sont** with **voici** or **voilà.**

How do you say:

Where are the books?
The books are there.
There are the books.
Where are the chairs?
There are the chairs.
The chairs are here.

Pronounce, and be sure you understand what you are saying:

Où est l'arbre?
Où sont les arbres?
Les arbres sont dans le jardin.
Où est l'encre?
L'encre est sur la table.
Où est l'homme?
Voilà l'homme!
Où sont les femmes?
Les femmes sont dans la maison.

Put the following questions into French, and then answer them in French:

Where is the lamp?
Where are the blankets?
Where is the bed?
Where are the chairs?
Where is the woman?
Where are the trees?
Where is the garden?

LESSON III

PRONOUNS

Always read aloud with careful attention to pronunciation all French sentences given as examples. Be-

gin each study period by reviewing at least three of the preceding lessons. Read aloud and pronounce aloud every French word and sentence.

Subject Pronouns, Third Person Singular and Plural.

il [eel] it, he **ils** [eel] they
elle [ell] it, she **elles** [ell] they

EXAMPLES

	Where is the lamp?	Où est la lampe?
	The lamp is here.	La lampe est ici.
or	It is here.	*Elle* est ici.
	Where is the book?	Où est le livre?
	The book is here.	Le livre est ici.
or	It is here.	*Il* est ici.
	Where is the man?	Où est l'homme?
	The man is here.	L'homme est ici.
or	He is here.	*Il* est ici.
	Where is the woman?	Où est la femme?
	The woman is here.	La femme est ici.
or	She is here.	*Elle* est ici.
	Where are the books?	Où sont les livres?
	The books are here.	Les livres sont ici.
or	They are here.	*Ils* sont ici.
	Where are the women?	Où sont les femmes?
	The women are here.	Les femmes sont ici.
or	They are here.	*Elles* sont ici.

Study the sentences given above. You see from the third sentence in each group that in French, as in English, we may for convenience use a pronoun (*it*, *he*, *she*, *they*) instead of a noun. You also notice that there are four forms used above — **il, elle, ils, elles.** These pronouns are used as subjects of sentences. They are

all *subject-pronouns.* **Il** and its plural form **ils** are used when a masculine noun (a **le**-noun) is referred to. **Elle** and its plural form **elles** are used when a feminine noun (a **la**-noun) is referred to.

How is *it* to be translated into French? We use, of course, **il** or **elle.** Which one? If the noun to which the *it* refers is a **le**-noun, we use **il.** If the noun to which the *it* refers is a **la**-noun, we use **elle.** **Il** means *he* only when the **le**-noun to which it refers is the name of a male. **Elle** means *she* only when the **la**-noun to which it refers is the name of a female.

You will notice that no use has been made of **voici** and **voilà** in the above sentences. **Voici** and **voilà** may be used with pronouns, but not with the subject pronouns given above. The pronouns used with **voici** and **voilà** are easy to learn, because they happen to be spelled the same as the definite article:— **le, la, les.** Their use is shown in the following:

Où est le livre?
Le voici! Here it is.
Le voilà! There it is.

Où est la femme?
La voici! Here she is.
La voilà! There she is.

Où est la chaise?
La voici! Here it is.
La voilà! There it is.

Où sont les chaises?
Les voici! Here they are.
Les voilà! There they are.

Answer each of the following questions in two ways. (1). Use pronoun subjects with **est** or **sont** instead of

repeating the noun; (2) Use **voici** or **voilà** with **le, la,** or **les,** as shown above.

1.	Où est le livre?	Où sont les livres?
2.	Où est la porte?	Où sont les portes?
3.	Où est l'arbre?	Où sont les arbres?
4.	Où est la lampe?	Où sont les lampes?
5.	Où est le lit?	Où sont les lits?
6.	Où est la femme?	Où sont les femmes?
7.	Où est l'encre?	Où sont les encres?
8.	Où est l'homme?	Où sont les hommes?
9.	Où est la couverture?	Où sont les couvertures?
10.	Où est la chaise?	Où sont les chaises?

LESSON IV

WORD DRILL

If, part of the time at least, you can make play of your study, you will learn more easily than if you take it in a dull and serious fashion. To teach yourself the names of the parts of the body, invent a lively exercise. First study the list of words given below, till you are sure of pronunciation and meaning. Then stand very straight, take a deep breath, and say by way of introduction, **"le corps".** Then begin with the head, **la tête,** and in a brisk staccato fashion name each of the following parts of the body, always pointing quickly to the part named. If you take them always in the same order, you will not need a printed list to remember them.

SINGULAR	MEANING	PLURAL
le corps [kore]	body	**les corps**
la tête [tett]	head	**les têtes**

le cheveu [shev-uh]	hair (one)	**les cheveux** the hair
le front [fron, §47]	forehead	**les fronts**
le sourcil [soor-see]	eyebrow	**les sourcils**
†**l'œil** [ay-ee, *rapidly*]*m.*	eye	**les yeux** [lay ziuh]
le nez [nay]	nose	**les nez**
la bouche [boosh]	mouth	**les bouches**
la lèvre [levv-r]	lip	**les lèvres**
la dent [dan, §46]	tooth	**les dents**
la langue [lang]	tongue	**les langues**
le menton [mahn-to(k)]	chin	**les mentons**
la barbe [barb]	beard	**les barbes**
la peau [poe]	skin	**les peaux**
l'oreille [oh-ray-ee] *f.*	ear	**les oreilles**
le cou [coo]	neck	**les cous**
la poitrine [pwah-treen]	breast	**les poitrines**
le cœur [cur-r]	heart	**les cœurs**
l'estomac[est-o-mack]*m.*	stomach	**les estomacs**
le bras [brah]	arm	**les bras**
le coude [cood]	elbow	**les coudes**
la main [man §47]	hand	**les mains**
le doigt [dwah]	finger	**les doigts**
la jambe [zham-b]	leg	**les jambes**
le genou [zhenn-ou]	knee	**les genoux**
le pied [pee-ay]	foot	**les pieds**
le doigt du pied	toe	**les doigts du pied**

As a variation on the mere exercise of naming the parts of the body, take the following list and go through with it in this way: Où est le bras? Le bras est ici. Voici le bras. Le voici.

List: Stomach, eyes, heart, ear, ears, leg, fingers, toes, teeth, head.

LESSON V

ADJECTIVES

Adjectives in French agree in gender and number with the nouns they modify.

MASCULINE

SINGULAR	PLURAL	
grand [grah, §47]	**grands**	large, tall
petit [puh-tee]	**petits**	little, small
joli [zho-lee]	**jolis**	pretty
vrai [rhyme with *ray*]	**vrais**	true
bleu [like *blu* in *bluff*]	**bleus**	blue
ouvert [oo-vair]	**ouverts**	open
intéressant [*in* like *an* in *man*, -tay-ress-ahn]	**intéressants**	interesting
sale [rhymes with *pal*]	**sales**	dirty
propre [proh-pr]	**propres**	neat, clean
rond [ron, §47]	**ronds**	round
froid [frwah]	**froids**	cold
chaud [show]	**chauds**	warm, hot
gros [gro]	**gros**	big, fat

FEMININE

SINGULAR	PLURAL	
grande*	**grandes***	large, tall
petite*	**petites***	little, small
jolie	**jolies**	pretty
vraie	**vraies**	true
bleue	**bleues**	blue
ouverte*	**ouvertes***	open
intéressante*	**intéressantes***	interesting
sale	**sales**	dirty
propre	**propres**	neat, clean

ronde*	**rondes***	round
froide*	**froides***	cold
chaude*	**chaudes***	warm, hot
grosse*	**grosses***	big, fat

**D*, *s*, or *t* sounded, final *-s* or *-es* silent.

You will see from a study of this list that **in** most adjectives you form the feminine by adding *-e* to the masculine. You form the plural by adding *-s* to the singular.

In French the adjective usually comes *after* the noun it modifies. We say:

les yeux bleus, [lay zi-uh bluh] blue eyes.

une fenêtre ouverte, [een fuh-nett-tr oo-vairt] an open window.

un portrait intéressant, [uh por-tray tan-tay-ress-ahn] an interesting portrait.

So in English—*bête noire*, *carte blanche*, *point blank*.

But some very common French adjectives — such as **gros, grand, petit, joli, vrai,** etc., stand before the noun, as in English. We say: **une petite fille, une jeune fille,** a little girl, a young girl, **une jolie femme,** a pretty woman.

Notice that the final silent *-e* or *-es* in the feminine gives a sound to the consonant that was silent in the masculine singular. This is true in **grand, petit, ouvert, rond, froid, chaud,** and **gros.** If it were not for this final silent *-e*, the final consonant would not be sounded.

Write in French, with careful attention to accents, gender, number, spelling, and position of the adjective the phrases given below. Correct your work by the Appendix at the end of the book. Mark each phrase zero if it has the smallest mistake in it; and see how well you do in your test. If you do not make at least eighty

per cent, go over this lesson again and write the Exercise a second time.

EXERCISE

1. A tall man.
2. A small chair.
3. A pretty blanket.
4. On the clean bed.
5. The fat stomach.
6. The cold hand.
7. The small foot.
8. The fat woman.
9. The clean house.
10. The open windows.
11. The interesting photograph.
12. The blue book.
13. The small girls.
14. On the round table.
15. The pretty women.
16. A small mouth.
17. An open door.
18. An interesting room.
19. In a little garden.
20. An open mouth.
21. A fat nose.
22. The eyes open.
23. The warm blanket.
24. The dirty teeth
25. A small head.

The following French adjectives are so much like the English that you will have no trouble in guessing their meaning and you will recognize them easily in reading French. You need not learn them, but it might be well for you to notice that, though they are very much like the English, most of them do differ slightly from the English.

When only one form is given, you are to understand that the masculine and feminine forms are the same.

Warning.— Not *one* of the words given is pronounced as in English. Make a careful study of the pronunciation of these words. Remember you cannot correctly give them the English pronunciation.

List of French Adjectives

pâle [pal]
adorable [ah-doh-rah-bl]
irrésistible [ir-ray-see-stee-bl]

magnifique [man-yee-feek]
militaire [mee-lee-tare]
moderne [moh-dairn]
agréable [ah-gray-ah-bl]
désagréable [day-sah-gray-ah-bl]
horrible [or-ree-bl]
terrible [tare-ree-bl]
stupide [stee-peed]
électrique [ay-leck-treek]
calme [sound the *l*]
formidable [fore-mee-dah-bl]
vaste [vah-st]
large [lar-zh]
tolérable [toh-lay-rah-bl]
simple [sam-pl]
superbe [see-pairb]
confortable [kon-four-tah-bl] (see §47)
actif, active [ahk-teef, ahk-teev]
secret [suh-kreh], secrète [suh-krett]
excellent, excellente [ex-sell-lahn (k), ex-sell-ahnt]
intellectuel [nasal *in*], [an-tell-lekt-ee-ell]
intellectuelle [an-tell-lekt-ee-ell]
absolu, absolue [ahb-so-lee]
différent, différente [dif-fay-rahn (k)], [dif-fay-rahnt]
indifférent [nasal *in*], indifférente
humain [nasal *ain*], humaine [ee-menn]
ardent, ardente [arr-dahn(k)], [arr-dahnte]
distant, distante [dee-stahn(k)], dee-stahnt]
inoffensif, inoffensive [een-off-fahn-seef] [seev]
présent [nasal *en*], [pray-zahn(k)] présente [pray-zahnt]
infernal [nasal *in*, -fair-nal], infernale
brutal, brutale [bree-tahl]
certain [sair, nasal -tain], certaine [sair-tenn]

primitif, primitive [pree-mee-teef], [-teeve]
supérieur [see-pay-ree-urr], supérieure
inférieur, inférieure [nasal *in-*]
offensif, offensive [off-fahn(k)-seef]
rélatif, rélative [ray-lah-teef', [-teev]

LESSON VI

REVIEW

1. What is the definite article in English?
2. How many forms has the definite article in French?
3. Give these forms, pronouncing each carefully.
4. What is the indefinite article in English?
5. How many forms has the indefinite article in French?
6. Give these forms.
7. How many genders has English? French?
8. Which gender is lacking in French?
9. Give the rule for the agreement of the adjective.
10. How do you form the feminine of the adjective?
11. How do you form the plural of the adjective?
12. How do you form the plural of the noun?
13. What is the usual position of the adjective in French?
14. Name five adjectives that do not follow this rule.
15. Name four subject-pronouns, two masculine and two feminine.
16. Name three other pronouns that are not subject pronouns.
17. Give four French words that are used for the English word *it*.
18. How do you know which one to use?
19. Give three French words that are used for the English word *they*.

20. How do you know which to use?
21. Give rapidly the French words for: bed, chair, window, door, tree, ink, man, room, house, garden, woman, girl, in, into, on, is, are, here-is, here-are, there-is, there-are.
22. *Write* names of the various parts of the body, then compare what you have written with list you were given. Correct especially for spelling and form of the article.

Warning.— If, when you start this review, you find it necessary to look back constantly at the preceding lessons to be able to answer the questions, you should then patiently *write* the answers to the questions. This will fix them well in your mind, and be a very good drill for you if you try to make your answers clear and complete. Then try again to give them all orally. You should stick right here until you can answer every question given above promptly, and with the assurance that you *know*.

LESSON VII

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES

	SINGULAR masc.	SINGULAR fem.	PLURAL masc. and fem.
my	**mon** [*o* as in *off*, nasal *n*]	**ma** [mah]	**mes** [may]
your	**ton** [*o* as in *off*, nasal *n*]	**ta** [tah]	**tes** [tay]
his, her, its	**son** [*o* as in *off*, nasal *n*]	**sa** [sah]	**ses** [say]
our	**notre** [noh-tr]	**notre** [noh-tr]	**nos** [noh
your	**votre** [voh-tr]	**votre** [voh-tr]	**vos** [voh]
their	**leur** [lurr]	**leur** [lurr]	**leurs** [lurr]

Notice that there are two words meaning *your*, **ton** and **votre**. Use **votre**. Only when you read French

books will you need to know **ton, ta, tes.** Don't use them in addressing a Frenchman.

Although **ma** is the feminine form of *my*, the French uses **mon** before feminine nouns beginning with vowels. For example, they say **mon amie,** not **ma amie.** The sound is more agreeable.

The words **mon, ton, son** etc. are often called possessive pronouns, rather than possessive adjectives. Adjective is a better name for them, because, like all other adjectives, they agree in number and gender with the nouns they modify, not with the words to which they refer. For example:

His hand or her hand, **sa main.** [sah man]
His hands or her hands, **ses mains.** [say man]
His bed or her bed, **son lit.** [son(k) lee]
His head or her head or its head, **sa tête.** [sah tett]
His mother or her mother or its mother, **sa mère.** [sah mair]

Learn the following words. Remember the advice formerly given: try to call up some definite person for each word. You may amuse yourself trying to decide which *aunt* you will allow to become permanently associated in your mind with the word **tante.**

The plurals of all these nouns are formed regularly — that is, by adding **-s** to the singular — with the exception of **fils** which has the plural **fils.**

la **famille** [fah-mee]	family
le **père** [pair]	father
la **mère** [mair]	mother
le **frère** [frair]	brother
la **sœur** [sur-r]	sister
le **fils** [fees, rhyme with *police*]	son

la **fille** [fee]	daughter
l'**enfant** *m.* or *f.* §46.	child
le **bébé**	baby
l'**oncle** *m.*	uncle
la **tante**	aunt
très [treh] (adverb)	very
le **grand-père**	grandfather
la **grand-mère**	grandmother
le **mari** [mah-ree]	husband
la **femme** [rhyme, *sam*]	wife
le **cousin** [koo-zan]	cousin (masculine)
la **cousine** [koo-zeen]	cousin (feminine)
l'**ami** [ah-mee] *m.*	friend
le **serviteur** [sair-vee-tuhr]	servant (man)
la **servante** [-vante]	servant (maid)
l'**amie** [ah-mee] *f.*	friend
le **garçon** [garr-sson]	boy
et (conjunction)	and
mais (conjunction)	but

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES. CARDINALS.

The numeral adjectives, with the exception of **un,** do not change in form. Learn to count rapidly:

1 **un, une**	5 **cinq** [sank]	9 **neuf** [nuff]
2 **deux** [duh]	6 **six** [rhymes with *peace*]	10 **dix** [rhymes with *peace*]
3 **trois** [trwah]	7 **sept** [sett]	11 **onze** [onz]
4 **quatre** [kat-r]	8 **huit** [weet]	12 **douze** [doo-z]

Write in French:

1. My family. 2. Our father. 3. Her mother. 4. His mother. 5. His son. 6. Their mother. 7. Their son. 8. Your grandfather. 9. My husband. 10. My friend. 11. My friend (fem.). 12. Our sons. 13. Your sisters. 14. Their children. 15. Their baby.

16. His aunt. 17. His servants (fem.). 18. Her servants (masc.). 19. My cousins. 20. His grandmother.

To see whether you have written the exercise correctly, compare with list in Appendix.

The French use the definite article instead of the possessive adjective if the meaning is absolutely clear without the possessive adjective. For example, they say often **"Où est la main?"** instead of **"Où est votre main?"**

POSSESSION

In English we say "The girl's mother," using the *-'s* to denote possession. We may also say "The mother of the girl". The French use only the second form of expression — "The mother of the girl" — **La mère de la fille** [lah mair duh lah fee]. The preposition **de** means *of*.

De has an inconvenient way of combining with the definite article. Learn the following facts:

de le is incorrect; use instead **du** [dee].
de l' is correct.
de la is correct.
de l' is correct.
de les is incorrect; use instead **des** [day].

Write in French:

1. The father of the family. 2. The mother of six children. 3. The portrait of my grandmother. 4. A photograph of the three children. 5. The head of the child. 6. My friend's son. 7. My father's mother. 8. My maid's husband. 9. The window of the room. 10. The boy's leg. 11. The baby's ears. 12. The blue eyes of the little children.

Compare with sentences in the Appendix.

EXERCISE

1. L'homme est très agréable. 2. Il est un ami de mon mari. 3. Voici les deux filles de l'homme. 4. Elles sont très jolies. 5. Voici (*See!*) les yeux blancs! 6. Où est monsieur votre mari? 7. Le voilà dans le jardin! 8. Notre jardin est adorable. 9. Votre jardin et votre maison sont magnifiques! 10. La maison est moderne et confortable. 11. Elle est très intéressante. 12. Les enfants sont pâles. 13. Leur tante est une cousine de ma mère, mais elle est une femme très désagréable. 14. L'oncle est un homme brutal. 15. Ils sont stupides.

LESSON VIII

PRESENT TENSE OF THE VERB **être,** *to be.*

je suis [zhuh swee]	I am
tu es [tee eh]	you are
il est [eel eh]	he is
nous sommes [noo somm]	we are
vous êtes [voo zett]	you are
ils sont [eel son]	they are

Il est means *it is*, as well as *he is*
Elle est means *it is*, as well as *she is.*
Elles sont as well as **ils sont** means *they are.*
Elles is the plural of **elle.**

Do you know when to use **il** or **elle, ils** or **elles**? If not, review Lesson III.

You notice that there are two ways of saying *you are.* **Tu es** is used only in addressing inferiors or child en, or very informally. The only safe thing to do is not to use it at all. **Vous êtes** is safe and correct. The

possessive adjective **ton** is used whenever the subject-pronoun **tu** is used. That means, so far as your writing or speaking is concerned, not at all.

In French two words are used to say *not*, **ne** (contracted before a vowel to **n'**) before the verb, and **pas** after the verb.

PRESENT OF **être** WITH **ne....pas,** *I am not*, ETC.

je ne suis pas [zhuh nuh swee pah]
tu n'es pas [tee neh pah]
il n'est pas [eel neh pah]

nous ne sommes pas [noo nuh summ pah]
vous n'êtes pas [voo nett pah]
ils ne sont pas [eel nuh son pah]

PRESENT OF **être** CONJUGATED INTERROGATIVELY

suis-je [sweezh]	am I?
es-tu [eh-tee]	are you?
est-il [eh-teel]	is he?
sommes-nous [summ noo]	are we?
êtes-vous [ett voo]	are you?
sont-ils [son teel]	are they?

INTERROGATIVELY AND NEGATIVELY

ne suis-je pas	am I not?
n'es-tu pas	are you not?
n'est-il pas [neh teel pah]	is he not?
ne sommes-nous pas	are we not?
n'êtes-vous pas	are you not?
ne sont-ils pas	are they not?

VOCABULARY

Learn the following words and phrases. Never forget to make a careful study of the pronunciation of each word.

monsieur [muh-see-uh, *rapidly*]
madame
mademoiselle [mad-mwah-zell]
bonjour [bon- as in *bonbon*, -zhoor] good morning
bonsoir [bon- as in *bonbon*, -swahr] good evening
adieu [ah-dee-uh, *rapidly*] goodby
au revoir [oh ruh-vwar] goodby (till next time)
oui [oo-ee, *rapidly, or* wee] yes
non [§47] no
pardon [parr-don] I beg your pardon
merci [mair-see] thank you! *often* no, I thank you!)
je vous remercie [zhuh voo ruhmair-see] I thank you, "thanks!"
c'est bien [seh bee-eh] it is good, very well, good! "all right!"
s'il vous plaît [seel voo play] if you please
tout, toute (*adjective*) all
malade (*adjective*) ill
fatigué, fatiguée (*adjective*) tired.
de rien [rien rhymes with bien] it is nothing, "don't mention it!"
il n'y a pas de quoi it is of no importance, "don't mention it!"
seul, seule (*adjective*) alone
aimable [ay-mah-bl] kind.

The word *Monsieur* corresponds to our *Mister*, *Madame* to our *Mrs.*, and *Mademoiselle* to our *Miss.* But the French words are also used alone. The newsboy with us says: "Have a paper, Mister?" — The tramp says: "Thank you, Miss." — The servant says: "Take care, ma'am!" But you do not say, when you meet a dignified acquaintance: "How are you, *mister?*" Nor when a lady at a reception pours you a cup of tea,

do you say: "Thank you, ma'am." The French use these three words freely in addressing people or in answering questions, and the same effect of leisurely courtesy is given as is given in English by our own use of the *name* of the person to whom we are speaking. For example, if Mr. Scott asks you if you have been at the opera, "No, Mr. Scott" is a somewhat more courteous answer than a bald "No". In such a case the French would invariably say: "Non, monsieur."

Read the following sentences, and see if you understand them:

Pardon, madame, êtes-vous malade?

Non, monsieur, je ne suis pas malade. Je suis très fatiguée.

Êtes-vous toute seule, madame? Où sont vos amis?

Non, monsieur, je ne suis pas seule. Mon fils et ma fille sont ici. Les voilà.

C'est bien, madame. Adieu.

Vous êtes très aimable, monsieur. Je vous remercie.

De rien, madame. Adieu.

Write in French:

1. Are you tired?
2. I am not tired.
3. Are they ill?
4. They are not ill.
5. We are all alone.
6. You are kind.
7. She is little.
8. He is not large.
9. Are they clean?
10. They are not clean.
11. They are dirty.
12. Is she fat.
13. She is not fat.
14. Are they tall?
15. They are tall.
16. They are not very tall.
17. We are very tired.
18. Is she pretty?
19. She is not pretty.
20. She is very interesting.

If, when you have written this exercise, and have compared it with the Appendix, you find you have made a poor showing, you *must* go over it tomorrow. Then do it again for speed. You should mark each sentence perfect or zero. Do not tolerate inaccurate work in yourself.

LESSON IX

PRESENT TENSE OF THE VERB **avoir**

j'ai [zhay]	I have
tu as [tee ah]	you have
il a [eel ah]	he has
nous avons [noo zavon]	we have
vous avez [voo zavay]	you have
ils ont [eel zon, rhyme with *bonbon*]	they have

NEGATIVE FORM

je n'ai pas [zhuh nay pah]	I don't have
tu n'as pas [tee nah pah]	you don't have
il n'a pas [èel nah pah	he doesn't have
nous n'avons pas	we don't have
vous n'avez pas	you don't have
ils n'ont pas	they don't have

You notice that the word for *I*, **je**, is contracted to **j'** before vowels.

You notice that there are two expressions for "you have." Do not use **tu as.** You will see it in French stories.

Learn the following words. Always remember to connect each word with the actual thing: when you read or say **la soupe**, think *soup*!

VOCABULARY

la **soupe** [soop]	**soup**

le **pain** [rhyme with *ran*]	bread
le **beurre** [burr]	butter
la **viande** [vee-ahnd]	meat
les **légumes** [lay-geem]	vegetables
les **'haricots** [ha-ree-ko]	beans
le **café**	coffee
le **sucre** [see-kr]	sugar
le **lait** [lay]	milk
le **thé** [tay]	tea
le **vin** [van, §47]	wine
le **chocolat** [sho-ko-lah]	chocolate
le **sel** [sell]	salt
l'**eau** [o] *f.*	water
la **pomme de terre** [pumm duh tair]	potato
les **petits pois** [pet-ee pwah]	green peas
bon, bonne [bunn] (adjective)	good
toujours [too-zhoor] (adverb)	always
donnez-moi [dunnay-mwah]	give me!

Have you ever thought how much we use the word *some*? We say, "I want *some* bread", "I want *some* water", "I should like *some* tea." Or we vary the usage and say, "Have you any money?" "Have you any influence?" "He hasn't any food." This idea of *some, any* is customarily expressed in French by the preposition **de** [duh].

de l'eau [duh lo] some water, any water.

du pain [dee pahn, *nasal n*] some bread, any bread.

de la viande [duh lah vee-ahnd] some meat, any meat.

des légumes [day lay-gheem] some vegetables, any vegetables.

But in sentences containing the negative **ne....pas** the definite article should be omitted, thus:

Il n'a pas d'eau, he doesn't have any water, he has no water.

Nous n'avons pas de pain, we have no bread.

Ils n'ont pas de viande, they have no meat.

Vous n'avez pas de légumes, you have no vegetables.

Write in French:

(Always write these exercises without looking back either to the examples or to the vocabulary. If you find that you cannot, study a little longer and start again. For the correct phrases see Appendix.)

1. Some soup.
2. Some butter.
3. Some peas.
4. Some beans.
5. Some potatoes.
6. Some chocolate.
7. Some blankets.
8. Some coffee.
9. Some ink.
10. Some wine.
11. I don't have any soup.
12. He doesn't have any ink.
13. They have no peas.
14. You have no beans.
15. I have no potatoes.

Translate:

C'EST LA GUERRE

Où est le vin, madame?

Je n'ai pas de vin, monsieur. J'ai de l'eau.

Merci, madame, n'avez-vous pas de lait?

Oui, monsieur, j'ai du bon lait. Voici le lait!

Où est le pain?

Le voici. Ma cousine a du vin, mais le vin de ma cousine n'est pas bon.

Le lait est très bon. N'avez-vous pas de viande?

Non, monsieur, nous avons des légumes — des petits pois et des haricots.

Avez-vous des pommes de terre?
Oui, oui, monsieur, toujours des pommes de terre!
Donnez-moi du beurre, s'il vous plaît!
Non, monsieur, nous n'avons pas de beurre.
Le lit n'est pas propre, madame.
Mais oui, monsieur, mes lits sont toujours propres.
Donnez-moi, s'il vous plaît, des couvertures propres!
Mais, monsieur, la couverture est propre.
Donnez-moi deux couvertures, madame!
Oui, monsieur, voici les couvertures toujours propres!

LESSON X

IDIOMS WITH **avoir**

English says:	French says:	
I am thirsty	I have thirst	j'ai soif [swahf]
I am hungry	I have hunger	j'ai faim [m silent, ai like *a* in answer]
I am cold	I have cold	j'ai froid [frwah]
I am warm	I have warm	j'ai chaud [show]
I am sleepy	I have sleep	j'ai sommeil [som-may-ee]
I am right	I have right	j'ai raison [ray-zon], §47.
I am wrong	I have wrong	j'ai tort [tore]

Never let yourself be caught saying absent-mindedly "**je suis faim.**" Here again you can fix this in your memory by saying to yourself, whenever you are hungry, "**j'ai faim.**" And so with the others.

VOCABULARY

bon [learn from the English *bonbon*] (adverb) very well! good!

le **fromage** [froh-mazh] cheese

apportez-moi bring me!

le **biscuit** [beess-kwee] cracker

Il y a.

Il y a means *there is, there are.* **Voilà** is used in pointing out a thing to a person to whom you are talking. **Il y a** does not point out, it is used in stating that there *is* something.

Read:

J'ai froid, mademoiselle. Apportez-moi du thé — chaud, s'il vous plaît!

Il n'y a pas de thé, monsieur, mais il y a du bon café.

Bon! Apportez-moi du café!

Le voici, monsieur. — N'avez-vous pas faim?

Non, je n'ai pas faim. — Avez-vous du fromage?

D'excellent fromage, monsieur. Roquefort? Camembert? Brie?

Apportez-moi un camembert!

Et des biscuits?

S'il vous plaît.

Les voici!

Write in French.

1. She is little.
2. She is cold.
3. She is pretty.
4. She is hungry.
5. The men are tired.
6. They are thirsty.
7. My mother is right.
8. I am wrong.
9. You are right—you are wrong.
10. The children are tired.
11. They are sleepy.
12. The woman is sick.
13. She is hungry.
14. We are not hungry.
15. We are thirsty.
16. Are you sleepy?
17. We are not sleepy.
18. Are you tired? (fatigué, fatiguée, fatigués, fatiguées).
19. We are not tired.
20. We are cold.

LESSON XI

QUESTIONS

(1) **Avez-vous faim**? [ah-vay voo fam] (to rhyme with *slam* but *nasal* m)

(2) **Est-ce que vous avez faim**? [ess-kuh voo zah-vay, etc]

(3) **Vous avez faim, n'est-ce pas**? [voo zah-vay fam, ness pah]

The French ask questions in the three ways illustrated above. You are familiar with the first. The second, translated literally, is: "*Is it that* you are hungry?" The third, translated literally, is: "You are hungry, *is it not*?" There is no object in remembering these clumsy translations. Remember merely that you can take any statement, and make a question of it by putting **"Est-ce que"** before it, or **"n'est-ce pas"** after it.

In French if you ask: "Is she pretty?" you may say: "Est-elle jolie?" But if you say: "Is your friend pretty?" you cannot say: "Est votre amie jolie?" You must say instead "Votre amie est-elle jolie?" Be careful of this in sentences 4, 5, 8 and 9 below.

Write each of the following sentences in three ways:

1. Are you ill?
2. Have you bread?
3. Is she pretty?
4. Has your room two windows?
5. Is your husband in the garden?
6. Have you children?
7. Are you cold?
8. Is the child sleepy?
9. Are the windows small?
10. Have you a tree in your garden?

(See Appendix)

Combien de [komm-bee-yeh duh] mean *how many.*

Il y a [eel ee ah *or* eel-yah] you remember, means *there is, there are.*

y a-t-il [ee ah teel] means *is there, are there.* (The **t** is just to make the phrase easier to say.)

Read aloud several times in French, then answer in French the following questions:

1. Combien d'enfants avez-vous?
2. Combien de chaises y a-t-il dans la chambre?
3. Combien de livres y a-t-il sur la table?
4. Combien d'arbres y a-t-il dans le jardin?
5. Combien de cousins avez-vous?
6. Combien de frères avez-vous?
7. Combien de fenêtres y a-t-il dans votre chambre?
8. Combien de couvertures y a-t-il sur le lit?
9. Combien de doigts avez-vous sur les deux mains?
10. Combien de doigts du pied avez-vous?

LESSON XII

REVIEW

In all review lessons review the five lessons immediately preceding the Review, without having looked at the questions you are to try to answer. Then *write* the answers to as many questions as you can without looking back for information. Do not cheat yourself. Leave an honest blank for any answer that you are not prepared to give from memory. Then go back and study carefully all points you found yourself uncertain in regard to. Also correct all the answers you have written. Then lay aside your answers, and go through the review orally.

1. Count to ten.
2. Give the present tense of the verb **avoir.**
3. Give same in the negative form.
4. Which of the following forms are incorrect? **De les, de la, de l', de le?**
5. Name seven possessive adjectives in English.
6. Give the French possessive adjectives in all their forms.
7. What possessive adjective are you to be cautious in using?
8. Say "my (lady) friend".
9. Possessive adjectives agree with their nouns.....in .....? (Fill in blanks).
10. Give present tense of verb **être.**
11. Give present tense of verb **être** with **ne....pas.**
12. Give French words for as many members of the family as you can.
13. Write these two sentences: (a) He has some bread. (b) He has not any bread. What effect does the negative have in this construction?
14. What are three ways of asking a question in French?
15. Say: "Is the window open?" in each of these three ways.
16. What is the difference between **Il y a** and **Voilà**?
17. How do you say: "I am hungry"? Name six other expressions which have the same peculiar idiom.

(In writing your answers, you will find it valuable training to make a point of writing legibly and neatly under all circumstances. Give your answers in clear, correct English, where English is required. Leave a clean margin at the left hand side of the page, and do not crowd your answers. Good form makes for clear accurate thinking.)

LESSON XIII

PRESENT TENSE OF REGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION

THE VERB **parler,** *to speak*

je parle [zhuh parl] I speak, I am speaking, I do speak.
tu parles [tee parl] you speak, you are speaking, you do speak.
il parle [eel parl] he speaks, he is speaking, he does speak.
nous parlons [noo par-lon(k)] we speak, we are speaking, we do speak.
vous parlez [voo par-lay] you speak, you are speaking, you do speak.
ils parlent [eel parl] they speak, they are speaking, they do speak.

Notice the three meanings for each form of the verb.

Write or give the forms of the verb in the negative: **je ne parle pas**—I speak not, I do not speak, I am not speaking, *etc.*

Remember that **tu parles** is to be avoided. Use **vous parlez** instead.

In verbs the ending **-ent** in the third person *plural* is always silent, though the final **t** may be carried over, by liaison, §53, to the initial vowel of the next word—**parlent-ils** [parl-teel]

Verbs in the list below are conjugated like **parler.**

In this list the infinitive form is given. We speak in English of the verb "be or "to be". So in most languages it is found convenient to refer to a verb by its infinitive form. The infinitive **parler** means "*to speak*", **avoir** "*to have*," **être** "*to be*", **donner** "*to give*",

etc. In English the "*to*"—sometimes called the sign of the infinitive—is not always expressed.

donner	[dun-nay]	to give
chercher	[shair-shay]	to hunt for
trouver	[troo-vay]	to find
arriver	[ah-ree-vay]	to arrive
porter	[por-tay]	to carry
apporter	[ahp-por-tay]	to bring
monter	[moan-tay]	to ascend, get into
regarder	[ruh-gar-day]	to look at
écouter	[ay-koo-tay]	to listen (to)
†**travailler**	[trah-vye-ay]	to work
fumer	[fee-may]	to smoke
dîner	[dee-nay]	to dine
montrer	[moan-tray]	to show

VERB DRILL

Give French forms for the English verbs.

je parle	**il parle**	**ils parlent**
I give	he is bringing	they show
I do not hunt for	he ascends	they do not look at
I am finding	he does not show	they do not hear
I do not arrive	he looks at	they are working
I carry	he doesn't listen	they smoke

Notice that the forms with **je, il,** and **ils** are pronounced alike in regular verbs. Query.—How can one tell the difference in pronunciation between **il parle** and **ils parlent?** Answer.—One can't.

nous parlons	**vous parlez**	**parle-t-il? parlent-ils?**
we do not work	you find	does he arrive?
we smoke	do you arrive?	do they arrive?
we are dining	you do not carry	does she arrive?
do we hunt for?	you are getting into	do they arrive?

Learn the following pronouns:

le—it, he (only with **voici, voilà**); him, it.
la—it, she (only with **voici, voilà**); her, it.
les—they (only with **voici, voilà**); them.
me—I (only with **voici, voilà**); me.
nous—we (use anywhere) us.
vous—you (use anywhere).

These are all *object* pronouns. **Nous** and **vous** are spelled the same when used as subject pronouns as when used as object pronouns. The other four can never be subjects.

Read the following sentences, giving particular attention to the pronouns:—

Où est le livre? Où est-elle?
Le voici! La voici!

Où êtes-vous? Où sont-ils?
Me voici! Les voici!

Où êtes-vous? Où sont-elles?
Nous voici! Les voici!

Où est mon fils?
Le voilà — dans le jardin! Nous l'appelons.

Où sont les enfants, madame?
Les voilà — dans la chambre! Je les appelle.

Où est la couverture? Où sont les légumes?
Je l'apporte, madame. Je les apporte.

You must *know* verbs.

Write every exercise on verbs with the greatest care. Form the habit of correcting your work patiently whenever the correct forms are given you in the Appendix. Then grade yourself. If you have not made at least eighty per cent, do the exercise again the next night. Do not leave any exercise until you have proved yourself able

to write it easily, rapidly, and with *at least* eighty per cent accuracy when strictly graded. Do not excuse yourself for the least mistake in spelling, or carelessness in the matter of accent.

In this case not only are the correct forms of these verbs given in the Appendix, but the proper pronunciation as well. *Pronounce* this list of fifty verbs three times at each study period for five successive periods. If you get restless at this patient grinding, remember that no honest man ever pretended that it was possible to learn a language over a week-end. It is slow work. If you play fair, however, you can do it.

1. She gives
2. We work
3. Has he
4. You arrive
5. He does not seek
6. They are
7. They have
8. Does she not speak
9. She listens
10. We do not find
11. They arrive
12. You do not carry
13. We look at
14. He speaks
15. She does not bring
16. He smokes
17. Does he ascend
18. He does not look at
19. We listen
20. We bring
21. They do not work
22. Do they smoke
23. He dines
24. We do not give
25. Do you dine
26. Have I
27. To seek
28. Does he not smoke
29. Does he find
30. Are they listening
31. Is she seeking
32. You find
33. Am I
34. To be
35. Do they show
36. We are finding
37. You hunt for
38. He is not listening
39. They show
40. I am working
41. They give
42. They are arriving

43. You show
44. He is carrying
45. They are bringing
46. Do you not work
47. Are we carrying
48. She is not giving
49. To have
50. Are they not dining

LESSON XIV

PRONOUNS

Used as subject	*Used as object*		*Used as indirect object*	
je—I	**me (moi)**	me	**me**	to me
tu—you	**te (toi)**	you	**te**	to you
il—it, he	**le**	it, him	**lui**	to him, to it
elle—it, she	**la (lui)**	it, her	**lui**	to it, to her
nous—we	**nous**	us	**nous**	to us
vous—you	**vous**	you	**vous**	to you
ils—they (*m.*)	**les**	them	**leur**	to them
elles—they(*f.*)	**les**	them	**leur**	to them

I give money to the girl.
I give the girl money.

The verb *give* takes two objects, the *thing* given (the direct object), and the person *to whom* the thing is given (the indirect object). As you see in the examples, it is not necessary with indirect objects to express the *to*. Nor is it true that every time you have the preposition *to* in a sentence, the sentence contains an indirect object.

Among the verbs that commonly take indirect objects are *give, tell, say, report, buy, sell.*

Position of pronouns: All the pronouns given above usually come *before* the verb. (Exceptions will be noted.) In a sentence containing more than one of these pronouns, put **me, nous, vous** before **le, la, les**; put **me, nous, vous, le, la, les** before **lui, leur.**

A knowledge of the correct position comes largely through reading numberless French sentences in which the order is correct, imitating these sentences patiently in any French you write yourself, and reading French aloud until you get the sing-song of the sentence, and the incorrect order "sounds wrong."

In studying the following word-list, remember the suggestion given in an early lesson: connect the words with actual things. For practice, go through the list, giving each word with the indefinite article, then with a possessive adjective, and when possible put a descriptive adjective with each. Then give the plural form of each, then put before each a numeral adjective (if the meaning of the word permits). Then put "some" before each word, and express it in French. If you do this, some of the words will be singular, some plural: for instance you will say **des crayons** [day kray-on(k)], but **du papier** [dee pahp-yay].

VOCABULARY

le crayon	[kray-on(k)]	pencil
le papier	[pahp-yay]	paper
la montre	[mon-tr]	watch
le canif	[kah-neef]	pocket knife
la pipe	[peep]	pipe
la lettre	[lett-tr]	letter
la plume	[pleem]	pen
l'argent *m.*	[ahr zhahn]	money
je peux	[zhuh puh]	I can
le journal	[zhoor-nall]	newspaper
les journaux	[zhoor-no]	newspapers
l'allumette *f.*	[al-lee-mett]	match

le tabac	[tah-bahk]	tobacco
le cigare	[see-garr]	cigar
le timbre(-poste)	[tam-br-pust]	(postage) stamp
à qui	[ah kee]	to whom
que voulez-vous?	[kuh voo-lay-voo]	what do you wish?
je veux	[zhuh vuh]	I wish

Translate:—

Que voulez-vous, monsieur?
Des timbres-poste.
Combien de timbres-poste voulez-vous, monsieur?
Dix, s'il vous plaît. — Avez-vous du tabac?
Non, monsieur, je n'ai pas de tabac, mais j'ai des bons cigares.
Merci, je ne peux pas fumer des cigares. Avez-vous des journaux?
Oui, monsieur. *Le Matin*? Le voici! Merci, monsieur.
Voici le journal! Je vous le donne.
Voici des allumettes! je les leur donne.
Voici le canif! Il me le donne.
Voici de l'argent! Nous vous le donnons.
Voici du papier et de l'encre.—Il nous les donne.
Voici des plumes.—Elle les leur donne.
Vous avez un très joli crayon.—Je vous le donne.
Où sont les lettres?—Je les ai dans la chambre.
A qui donnez-vous les cigares?—Je les lui donne.
A qui donne-t-il la photographie de sa mère?—Il me la donne.
A qui donnent-elles les lettres?—Elles me les donnent.
Je leur donne de l'argent.
Ils me donnent du pain.
La femme nous donne du vin.
Nous lui donnons de l'argent.

LESSON XV

IMPERATIVE FORMS

The following are the imperative forms of the verb:

donne [dunn] give!

donnons [dunn-on(k)] let us give! **donnez** [dunn-nay] give!

Do not use **donne.** You will see it in stories.

Learn thoroughly the following phrases containing combinations of imperatives and pronouns. Use them as models when you are writing similar forms. Model phrases and sentences are your best guide in studying French.

Indirect Objects.

Donnez-moi	Give me!
Donnez-lui	Give him (or her)!
Donnez-nous	Give us!
Donnez-leur	Give them!

Direct Objects.

Donnez-le	Give it (to someone)!
Donnez-la	Give it!
Donnez-les	Give them!

Both Direct and Indirect.

Donnez-le-moi	Give it to me!
Donnez-le-lui	Give it to him (or her)!
Donnez-le-nous	Give it to us!
Donnez-le-leur	Give it to them!

Indirect pronoun object and direct noun object, negative introduced.

Ne me donnez pas d'argent	Don't give me any money!
Ne lui donnez pas d'argent	Don't give him any money!
Ne nous donnez pas d'argent	Don't give us any money!
Ne leur donnez pas d'argent	Don't give them any money!

You will notice that:

With the imperative, the object-pronouns (whether direct or indirect) come *after* instead of *before* the verb: and are joined to the verb by hyphens.

Exception.—If the negative is used, the object-pronoun is put *before* the verb.

With the affirmative imperative the object-pronouns **me** and **te,** when they follow the verb, have the forms **moi** and **toi. Moi** and **toi** are also used as the objects of prepositions.

EXAMPLES

Défendez-moi [day-fahn-day-mwah] protect me! (We would expect **me**).

Sauve-toi [sove-twah] save yourself! (We would expect **te**).

Ne me défendez pas do not defend me!

Ne te sauve pas do not save yourself!

Write in French:

1. Hunt for the woman.
2. Look! The window is open.
3. Show me the room.
4. Let's listen.
5. Do not listen.
6. Look at the sick baby.
7. I am giving her some milk.
8. Do not give her any milk.
9. Have you any vegetables?
10. There are green peas.
11. Give me some peas.
12. Where is your mother? (Put in the courteous **madame** before "your mother".)
13. Is your mother in the house? (Say in three ways.)
14. Yes, mademoiselle, I am calling her.

15. Do not call her, please.
16. I wish to speak to you.
17. Let's not speak to him.
18. Bring me some water, please.
19. What do you want? Warm water?
20. I cannot find my mother.
21. Show me your house.
22. Let's eat dinner.
23. Let's not smoke.
24. I am hungry.
25. You are right. I want to eat dinner here.

(See Appendix.)

LESSON XVI

PRESENT TENSE OF IRREGULAR VERB **aller,** *to go*

je vais	[zhuh vay]	I go, am going
tu vas	[tu vah]	you go, etc.
il va	[eel vah]	he goes, etc.
nous allons	[noo zal-lon(k) §53]	we go, we are going
vous allez	[voo zal-lay]	you go, etc.
ils vont	[eel von(k)]	they go, etc.

Imperative	**va**	go!
	allons	let us go
	allez	go!

The preposition **à** means *to, at, in.*

à le is incorrect; say **au** [oh]
à la is correct
à l' is correct
à les is incorrect; say **aux** [oh]

Aller is a very necessary verb. It occurs in many everyday expressions. An easy way to express future

time is with aller: **je vais chercher** means "I am going to look for"; **je vais fumer** means "I am going to smoke"; etc.

Learn thoroughly the following common expressions:

Comment allez-vous [cum-mahn tal-lay voo]?	How do you do?
Je vais bien [zhuh vay bee-eh].	I am well.
Très bien [treh bee-eh §46].	Very well.
Comment ça va [cum-mahn(k) sah vah]?	How are you? "How goes it?"(informal)
Ça va bien [sah vah bee-eh].	Very well, "All right".
Comment vous portez-vous [cum-mahn(k) voo por-tay voo]?	How do you do?
Je me porte bien [zhuh muh port bee-eh].	I am well.
Comment va monsieur votre mari? [cum-mahn(k) vah muh-syuh voh-tr mah-ree]?	How is your husband?
Il va bien [eel vah bee-eh].	He is well.
Allez-vous en [al-lay-voo zahn(k)]	Run along, go away.

VOCABULARY

le **cinéma** [see-nay-mah]	moving-picture show, the "movies"
le **bureau** [bee-roh]	office
la **rue** [ree]	street
la **rue Wilson**	Wilson Street
le **magasin** [mah-gah-zan]	store
le **restaurant** [ruh-stoh-rahn(k)]	restaurant
la **poste**	post-office
l'**hôtel** *m.* [oh-tell]	hotel
l'**église** *f.* [ay-gleez]	church
l'**école** *f.* [ay-kole]	school

à moi [ah mwah]	mine
à droite [ah drwat]	at the right
à gauche [ah go-sh]	at the left
à Chicago [ah shee-kah-go]	in Chicago
en France	in France

EXERCISE

Write in French:

1. My husband goes to the office.
2. My children go to school.
3. My mother goes to church.
4. My servant goes to the moving pictures.
5. I am going to the shop.
6. Let's go to the restaurant.
7. They are going to the hotel.
8. In Chicago we go to the movies.
9. In France we go to the restaurants.
10. In the United States we go to church.
11. I am going to hunt for my cousin's house.
12. The house is on (**dans**) Wilson Street.
13. Go to the right, to Wilson Street.
14. Where is the hotel?
15. There is a hotel on Wilson Street. Go to the left.
16. I am not going to look for it.
17. Whose house is it? (To whom is the house?)
18. It is mine. (It is to me.)
19. Whose office is it?
20. It is my brother's.

Translate (Read aloud in French):

Comment allez-vous, madame?
Je vais bien, Marie.
Et monsieur votre mari? Comment va-t-il?
Il va bien, merci. Et vous, Marie?
Très bien, madame. Où allez-vous? Au magasin?

Non, je vais à la poste.

Vous avez des lettres? Moi aussi, je vais porter une lettre à la poste. Donnez-moi vos lettres, madame.

C'est bien, Marie. Merci. Mais apportez-moi des lettres, s'il vous plaît.

Oui, madame. Que voulez-vous? Une, deux, trois — dix?

Une bonne lettre, Marie. Allez-vous-en!

Au revoir, madame.

LESSON XVII.

PRESENT TENSE OF **voir** [vwahr]—*to see*

je vois [vwah]	I see	**nous voyons** [voy-on(k)]	we see
tu vois [vwah]	you see	**vous voyez** [voy-yay]	you see
il voit [vwah]	he sees	**ils voient** [vwah]	they see

Imperatives **voyons** let us see
voyez see!

Learn:

ne....rien [nuh ree-eh §46]	nothing
ne....plus [nuh plee]	no longer, not any more
ne....jamais [zhah-may]	never
ne....personne [pair-sunne]	no one, nobody
ne....que [nuh kuh]	only
ne....ni....ni [nuh....nee]	neither....nor
pas du tout [pah dee too]	not at all
peu de [puh duh]	little, few
l'**amour** *m.* [ah-moor]	love
le **nom** [numm]	name

Je ne vois rien. I see nothing.

Je ne vais plus à l'église I do not go to church any more.

Je ne vous vois jamais	I never see you.
Je ne vois personne.	I see nobody.
Je ne vois que vous.	I see only you.

Read a number of times the examples given above. Then translate the sentences that follow. After you are sure that you have the correct meaning for them, and have decided upon a natural English translation for them, read the sentences aloud in French three or four times to train your ear to the proper order of words.

EXERCISE

1. Nous n'avons rien.
2. Vous n'avez plus rien.
3. Mademoiselle n'est plus là.
4. Je ne suis personne.
5. Mademoiselle n'est qu'une enfant.
6. Personne ne va jamais là.
7. Jamais il ne parle de vous.
8. Personne ne vous donne d'argent.
9. Il me donne de l'argent, mais il ne me donne que de l'argent.
10. Elle n'est qu'une petite Américaine.
11. Le jeune homme n'a rien, ni nom ni fortune.
12. Jamais l'amour n'est dans mon cœur.
13. Elle ne donne que peu d'attention à vous.
14. Il n'y a rien. (Compare with *il y a*).
15. Il ne cherche plus à vous voir.
16. Il n'est plus malade.
17. Je ne peux être que votre amie.
18. Mon frère n'est ni grand ni petit.
19. Il n'y a rien de plus aimable que (*than*) votre amie.
20. Il ne parle que de vous.
21. Il ne parle rien que de vous.

22. Je ne peux plus vous voir.
23. Ne parlons plus de votre amie.
24. Dans toutes vos lettres il n'est question que de votre amie.
25. Vous ne voyez jamais rien.

After carefully studying the French sentences, write:

1. Nobody smokes at church.
2. We never dine at the restaurant.
3. Do you never go to the movies?
4. I am hunting a house, but I never find it.
5. The man does not work any more.
6. I hear only my mother.
7. Do not look at me any more.
8. They bring me only cold water.
9. Nobody speaks English (anglais).
10. We are hunting, but we find nothing.

LESSON XVIII

READING, VOCABULARY, PREPOSITIONS

From this time on, French sentences will be given in which words are introduced that have not been given you in the word-lists. Either these words will be so nearly like the English words that their meaning is easily guessed, or they will be given in the general vocabulary in the back of the book. These words you will not be expected to use in your English sentences, but if you are especially keen on acquiring a vocabulary rapidly, you may, of course, list them as you meet them, and learn them.

VOCABULARY

le **train** [tran(k); *a* as in *ran*] train

l'heure *f.*	[urr]	hour
le soldat	[sol-dah]	soldier
le village	[veel-lazh]	village
la route	[root]	road, route
la boue	[boo]	mud
les gens *m.*	[zhahn(k)]	people; servants
marcher	[mar-shay]	to walk, march
aimer	[ay-may]	to like, love
qui	[kee]	who
bien	[bee-eh §46]	well, very, to be sure, really
ce	[suh]	he, she, it, they, this, that
dernier *m.*	[dair-nyay]	last
dernière *f.*	[dair-nyair]	
brave	[brahv]	good, worthy
plus	[plee]	more

Study the following sentences until you understand what they mean:

Voilà les soldats, musique en tête! Ce sont les deux régiments de la brigade.

Qui est le grand homme avec la médaille militaire sur la poitrine?

C'est le général de notre brigade.

Il me donne une immense impression de force.

Voilà les dix canons boches capturés dans les derniers combats.

Les soldats sont fatigués, n'est-ce pas?

Oui, il y a un ennemi terrible, bien plus terrible que (*than*) les Boches, — la boue.

Les soldats marchent avec beaucoup d'effort.

Ils sont fatigués dans tout le corps. Une marche régulière est impossible dans la boue. Ils ont froid.

Ils arrivent ici, à notre grande surprise, au bout de (*at the end of*) trois heures de marche — à ce village en ruines, lamentable fantôme de village!

Voilà un soldat avec une pipe à la bouche.

Les femmes leur donnent du pain et du chocolat, et du café chaud. Ont-ils faim?

Ils ont toujours faim, et ils ont bien soif. Je connais (*know*) les soldats. Je les aime bien, car ils sont de braves gens. Je connais leurs petites affaires de cœur ou de famille. Ils me montrent des photographies de la famille. Je commence à être leur ami.

PREPOSITIONS

The correct use of prepositions is difficult in any language. If you have known people to whom English is a "foreign language", you must have noticed how often, even after they speak English with ease, they will continue to make blunders in their use of prepositions. — You should have no trouble with prepositions in translating from French to English. Exercises like the following may guide you somewhat in translating from English to French:

Use **dans** [dahn(k)]:

In a room of the house
In one of the streets of the village
In my father's small house
On the train
In the large hotels of Paris
In books (do not omit the article)

Use **en** [ahn(k)]:

In France(omit article)
In Champagne " "
At the head " "
In his heart
(Faith) *in* his wife

Use **à:**

At Paris
On the men's legs
On the lips of the children

Use **par** [parr]:

By means of a door
By means of the books

At the right, *at* the left (omit article)
To my mother

Use **sur** [seer]:

On the table
On his head (Do you say *his*?)
Along the road
On the chair

By means of the hands
Of the women of France

Use **pour** [poor]

For France (use **la**)
For the children
For the two sisters
For the church

Use **avec** [ah-veck]:

With my men
With a pipe in (**à**) his (use def. article) mouth
With my friends
With me (**me** or **moi**?)

LESSON XIX

PRESENT TENSE OF VERB **venir**—*to come*

je viens	[vee-eh §46]	I come
tu viens	[vee-eh]	you come
il vient	[vee-eh]	he comes
nous venons	[venn-on(k)]	we come
vous venez	[venn-nay]	you come
ils viennent	[vee-enn]	they come

Imperatives: **viens, venons, venez**

la **salle**	living-room, hall
la **salle à manger**	dining-room
la **chambre (à coucher)**	bedroom
la **salle de bains**	bathroom
la **cuisine**	kitchen
la **pièce**	room
la **cheminée**	fire-place

le **meuble**	furniture
le **garage**	garage
au rez-de-chaussée	on the ground floor
en haut	upstairs
au premier	on the second floor
venir	come
entrer	go into, enter, come in
derrière	behind
devant	before
content, contente	pleased, satisfied
tout le monde	everybody
ce (**cet**) *m.* **cette** *f.* **ces** *pl.*	this, that, these, those

Unless otherwise stated verbs are conjugated like **donner.**

EXERCISES

Translate:

Bonjour, monsieur. Je viens chercher une maison pour ma sœur.

Que voulez-vous, une grande maison?

Non. Ma sœur a deux enfants. Elle n'a qu'une servante. Je veux une petite maison, dans une belle rue, avec un joli jardin.

Oui, monsieur. Venez avec moi, s'il vous plaît. Voici mon automobile. — Eh bien, nous arrivons. Voici une belle maison! Il y a un jardin et un garage. Tout le monde trouve cette maison charmante.

Combien de pièces y-a-t-il?

Il y a huit pièces, — la grande salle, la salle à manger, et la cuisine au rez-de-chaussée, et quatre chambres pas grandes en haut. Il y a aussi une salle de bains.

Comment! Une salle de bains!

Oui, monsieur. La maison a des meubles simples mais admirables, et elle est très propre. Entrons dans la salle, monsieur. Voila la cheminée, et voilà les fenêtres. La salle a quatre fenêtres. Il y a deux fenêtres dans toutes les chambres. Voyez-vous, monsieur, vous avez tort de refuser cette maison. Entrons dans la salle à manger. Elle est charmant, n'est-ce pas? Et voici la cuisine — petite, mais avec des arrangements excellents. Derrière la maison vous voyez le jardin. Le jardin, la maison, tout est charmant. Regardez l'arbre devant la porte. C'est beau, n'est-ce pas?

Oui, très beau. Merci, monsieur. Je suis content.

Answer the following questions in French:

1. How many rooms in your house?
2. On what floor is the kitchen?
3. On what floor are the bedrooms?
4. Where is the garage?
5. Have you a garden?
6. Are there trees in your garden?
7. Have you a fireplace?
8. In what room is the fireplace?
9. Is the bathroom on the ground floor, or upstairs?
10. How many windows in the dining-room?

LESSON XX

PRESENT TENSE OF vouloir, pouvoir, savoir

vouloir—to wish

je veux	[vuh]	I wish
tu veux	[vuh]	you wish
il veut	[vuh]	he wishes

nous voulons	[voo-lon(k)]	we wish
vous voulez	[voo-lay]	you wish
ils veulent	[vull]	they wish

pouvoir—to be able

je peux (or **puis**)	[puh *or* pwee]	I am able
tu peux	[puh]	you are able
il peut	[puh]	he is able
nous pouvons	[poo-von(k)]	we are able
vous pouvez	[poo-vay]	you are able
ils peuvent	[puvv]	they are able

savoir—to know

je sais	[say]	I know
tu sais	[say]	you know
il sait	[say]	he knows
nous savons	[sah-von(k)]	we know
vous savez	[sah-vay]	you know
ils savent	[savv]	they know

Give the infinitives of the following verbs:

1 have	6 arrive	11 work	16 see
2 be	7 carry	12 smoke	17 march, walk
3 give	8 bring	13 dine	18 come
4 look for	9 look at	14 show	19 speak
5 find	10 listen to	15 go	20 go into

Do not put an adverb between the subject and the verb.

Learn the following list of adverbs:

maintenant	now	**toujours**	always
aujourd'hui	today	**trop**	too, too much
encore	again, still	**vite**	quickly, rapidly
quelquefois	sometimes	**lentement**	slowly
souvent	often	**tard**	late

assez (de)	enough	**enfin**	finally
déjà	already	**eh bien**	well then
partout	everywhere	**tout de suite**	at once
surtout	especially	**doucement**	softly, slowly
alors	then		

Write the following sentences with care, then correct by Appendix. Take three off for every mistake, and see how carefully you have learned your lessons up to this time. If you make more than ten mistakes, look at each mistake, to see what it is you are weak on, then tear up the paper and write the exercise again.

EXERCISE

1. They often come.
2. I have enough meat.
3. He is already in Paris.
4. Children are everywhere.
5. Bring me some water at once.
6. You speak too rapidly.
7. We work sometimes.
8. He never works.
9. You cannot smoke here.
10. They always work.
11. We dine too late.
12. Well then, let's go.
13. Where are we now?
14. He arrives today.
15. They walk slowly.
16. Speak slowly, please.
17. You walk too rapidly.
18. Are you eating again? (Two ways)
19. Sometimes I see him.
20. Show me the letter again.
21. I am going to smoke now.
22. Listen to your mother, my son.
23. Here are the children. Look especially at the little girl.
24. Carry the book to my room.
25. Hunt the child's mother.
26. I cannot find her.
27. Go on! Find the woman.
28. I am going to look for her.
29. He always arrives very late.

30. He is going to give me some money.
31. You have money enough.
32. Let us go into the house now.
33. We see the woman at (à) the window.
34. He can't eat meat.
35. Do you know where the house is (where is the house)?
36. I do not know where it is (*not* where is it).
37. Do you want to come with me?
38. He cannot dine with you often.
39. He lives on Wilson Street now.
40. He is sometimes cold, and often hungry.
41. I am not always right.
42. You are not often wrong.

LESSON XXI

PRESENT TENSE OF manger AND boire

manger — to eat

je mange	I eat	**nous mangeons**	we eat
tu manges	you eat	**vous mangez**	you eat
il mange	he eats	**ils mangent**	they eat

The first three and the last verb-forms are pronounced alike— [mahn-zh].

Imperative **mangeons** [manzhon(k)] let us eat
mangez eat

boire — to drink

je bois	[bwah]	I drink
tu bois	[bwah]	you drink
il boit	[bwah]	he drnks
nous buvons	[bee-von(k)]	we drink
vous buvez	[bee-vay]	you drink
ils boivent	[bwah-v]	they drink

Imperative **buvons, buvez**

PREPOSITION **chez**

chez moi	at my house, to my house, at my office, in my room, at home (my home)
chez nous	at our house, to our house, in our country, among our people, "with us"
chez lui, chez elle, chez eux, chez elles	used in same way as **chez moi, chez nous**
chez mon père	at my father's house, at father's
chez les Brown	at Browns'
chez qui	at whose house

VOCABULARY

le **déjeuner**	breakfast, lunch	le **potage**	(thick)soup
le **dîner**	dinner	le **hors d'œuvre**	relish
le **souper**	supper	le **poisson**	fish
déjeuner	to have lunch to have breakfast	le **rôti**	roast
le **menu**	menu, bill of fare	le **bœuf**	beef
commander	order	le **rosbif**	roast beef
désirer	wish	le **gigot**	leg of lamb
le **verre**	glass	le **veau**	veal
la **tasse**	cup	le **jambon**	ham
la **demi-tasse**	small cup (used for after dinner coffee)	le **jus**	gravy
		le **poulet**	chicken
		le **canard**	duck
que	how	la **salade**	lettuce, salad
quel dommage!	what a shame! too bad!	la **glace**	ice, ice-cream
café noir	black coffee	le **dessert**	dessert
café au lait	coffee with hot milk	les **bonbons**	bonbons
le **garçon**	waiter	le **morceau**	piece, lump (of sugar)

Write:

1. At home we never drink wine.
2. The children drink neither tea nor coffee.
3. They drink milk only.
4. My brother is not well.
5. He never eats meat.
6. I am hungry. Let's eat now.
7. Bring me a glass of water, please. I am very thirsty.
8. I am going to look for some milk for the children.
9. Here is the menu for (**de**) your dinner.
10. I want to eat dinner (do not use **manger**) with you at the restaurant.
11. Dine with me at my house.
12. I see the women in their home.
13. At whose house are you dining today?
14. I am dining with some friends at the Whites'.
15. I am coming from your house.

Translate:

A L'HÔPITAL

Allez-vous-en, Jean! Et je ne peux pas boire que de l'eau. De l'eau! Qui veut de l'eau? J'ai bien faim. Chez nous ils dînent maintenant, et ils dînent bien chez nous. Voulez-vous savoir le menu, Jean? De la soupe, voyez-vous, Jean, du potage! Et des hors d'œuvres. J'adore les hors d'œuvres! Nous mangeons maintenant un peu de poulet ou de canard. Voulez-vous du poisson, Jean? Qu'est-ce que vous commandez? Ni du poulet ni du poisson? Quel dommage! Mais désirez-vous du jambon — ou du veau — ou voulez-vous du rosbif? Vous n'avez pas faim? Garçon, apportez du lait pour Monsieur..... du lait chaud! Moi je veux du rosbif, rosbif au jus, avec légumes, et de la salade,

et puis un dessert — de la glace avec des bonbons. Après le dessert, du café noir. Une demi-tasse? Pas du tout, garçon! Une tasse, s'il vous plaît, une grande tasse. Je fume maintenant — dix cigares! Apportez-moi aussi un petit verre de bénédictine.

Oh, que je suis malade! Donne-moi une cigarette, et va-t-en!

LESSON XXII

NUMERALS

In Lesson V you learned to count to twelve. The other numbers which are in ordinary use are given below. It is not absolutely necessary that you learn these thoroughly before you go on to the next lesson, but it is desirable that you study them with care, get the general idea of the way the French form numerals, and refer to them patiently as they occur in later lessons until you do really know them.

CARDINAL NUMBERS FROM THIRTEEN

13 treize [trays]
14 quatorze [kah-torz]
15 quinze [cans]
16 seize [saze]
17 dix-sept [deess-sett]
18 dix-huit [deez-weet]
19 dix-neuf [deez-nuff]
20 vingt [-ngt silent, *i* like *a* in ant]
21 vingt et un *or*
21 vingt et une
22 vingt-deux
23 vingt-trois
30 trente [trahnt]
31—39 learn from 21 etc.
40 quarante [kah-rahnt]
50 cinquante [sank-ahnt]
60 soixante [swah-zahnt]
70 soixante-dix [-deess]
71 soixante-onze
72 soixante-douze
80 quatre-vingts [-ngts silent]
81 quatre-vingt-un *or*
81 quatre-vingt-une
82 quatre-vingt-deux

90 quatre-vingt-dix
91 quatre-vingt-onze
99 quatre-vingt-dix-neuf
100 cent [-nt silent, rhymes with *hah!* pronounced sharply]
one hundred **cent,** *a* hundred **cent,** (Notice omission of article in French)
101 cent un *or*
101 cent une
102 cent deux
200 deux cents
201 deux cent un
301 trois cent un
999 neuf cent quatre-vingt-dix-neuf
1000 mille [meal] *sometimes* mil
1001 mille un
1492 quatorze cent quatre-vingt-douze
1620 seize cent vingt
1776 dix-sept cent soixante- seize
1789 dix-sept cent quatre-vingt-neuf
1861 dix-huit cent soixante et un
1900 dix-neuf cents
1919 dix-neuf cent dix-neuf
1921 dix-neuf cent vingt et un

Exercise. Write the following numbers in French in full. Then close your book, and translate what you have written into figures. Then compare the figures you have written with the list in the book.

1, 2, 4, 9, 14, 17, 21, 29, 31, 37, 42, 46, 52, 63, 74, 80, 85, 89, 90, 92, 98, 99, 100, 101, 1763, 1789, 1812, 1845, 1875, 1914, 1920, 1918, 1917, 1916.

VOCABULARY

la **minute**	minute	**âgé, âgée**	old
l'**heure** *f.*	hour	l'**âge** *m.*	age

le **jour**	day	le **kilomètre**	kilometer
la **semaine**	week	**au bout de**	after, at the end of
le **mois**	month	**depuis**	since, for
l'**an** *m.*	year	**pendant**	during
l'**année** *f.*	year	**rester**	to stay

Study carefully the following sentences:

Quel âge avez-vous?	How old are you?
J'ai quatorze ans.	I am fourteen years old, I am fourteen
Un fils âgé de quatorze ans	A son fourteen years old
Une jeune fille âgée de quinze ans	A young girl fifteen years old
A dix ans	At the age of ten
Un homme de trente ans	A man of thirty
Tous les ans	Every year
Il y a trois ans	Three years ago

Notice especially that the French say "What age *have* you"; that the word *year* is not omitted; that **il y a,** with expressions of time means "ago". (What has **il y a** meant up to this time?)

EXERCISE

Write in French, and correct by Appendix:

1. A boy twelve years old.
2. A girl of twelve.
3. At forty.
4. A man of twenty.
5. He is forty-nine.
6. The train arrives every day.
7. Eighty-nine years old.
8. At the age of seventy-one.
9. He was here ten days ago.
10. He is seventy-eight.
11. Stay for five minutes.
12. An hour ago.
13. Two months ago.
14. After ten days.
15. A week ago.
16. After six weeks.
17. How old is your uncle?

18. He is seventy-seven years old.
19. How old are you?
20. How old is she?
21. I have been (**suis**) here for six months.
22. Stay at home for five minutes.
23. How old am I?
24. After fifteen days he was sick.
25. He is here every day.
26. I am only twelve years old.
27. There are seven days in a week.

LESSON XXIII

PRESENT TENSE OF **partir, dire, faire, écrire**

partir— to leave		**dire**— to say,		**faire**— to do, make		**écrire**— to write	
je pars	[parr]	**je dis**	[dee]	**je fais**	[fay]	**j'écris**	[ay-kree]
tu pars		**tu dis**		**tu fais**		**tu écris**	
il pars		**il dit**		**il fait**		**il écrit**	
nous partons		**nous disons**		**nous faisons**		**nous écrivons**	
vous partez		**vous dites**		**vous faites**		**vous écrivez**	
ils partent		**ils disent**		**ils font**		**ils écrivent**	

It has not been considered necessary to give the meanings of each form of the present tense of the verb hereafter. By this time you know them.

EXERCISE

Review sentences (For correct sentences see Appendix)

1. He does not know any more where he is.
2. You are going to see if (**si**) I am not hungry.
3. Am I not right in thinking (**de penser**) that you are my friend?
4. You are right in thinking it.

5. We do not want to see anybody.
6. Do not go too fast, sir.
7. Do you know how much money I am going to give?
8. Well, how is your son?
9. He is well. Only (**seulement**) he says there are no cigars in France.
10. Poor boy! Here are cigars. I am giving them to you for your boy.
11. You are certainly (**bien**) your father's son.
12. I am going to dine at your house with your mother.
13. Let's stay, will you?
14. Stay there.
15. Don't say anything.
16. Listen to me carefully.
17. I am listening (to you).
18. I ask nothing of you.
19. I do not want to know anything.
20. Well, for my part (**moi**), I want to tell everything.
21. I am wrong to (**de**) tell you everything.
22. They know what (**ce que**) I am going to do.
23. Let's go see them, will you?
24. In one hour he is going to leave.
25. You know it very well.
26. Yes, I know it.
27. I am wrong to speak of (**de**) myself.
28. If you love me, I too love you.

LESSON XXIV

PRESENT PERFECT TENSE

donner

j'ai donné	I gave, I have given
tu as donné	you gave, you have given
il a donné	he gave. he has given

nous avons donné we gave, we have given
vous avez donné you gave, you have given
ils ont donné they gave, they have given

Past time, in conversation, is expressed by an auxiliary verb (**avoir** usually, **être** less often), and the past participle of the verb. You may call this tense the *present perfect.*

In this lesson only verbs having the auxiliary **avoir** are used. When a verb has the auxiliary **être,** you will be informed of the fact. Use **avoir** unless otherwise directed.

Some things it is possible to slight, and still make considerable headway in the language. Verbs cannot be slighted. Study verbs with the utmost care, read and reread the French sentences with particular attention to the verbs. Learn your forms so that you have not the least hesitation when you need to use one.

List of verbs used in preceding lessons.

Infinitives		*Past Participles*	
donner	to give	**donné**	given
chercher	to hunt for	**cherché**	hunted for
trouver	to find	**trouvé**	found
porter	to carry	(formed like donné)	carried
apporter	to bring		brought
monter	to go up		gone up
regarder	to look at		looked at
écouter	to listen to		listened to
travailler	to work		worked
fumer	to smoke		smoked
dîner	to dine		dined
montrer	to point out		pointed out
parler	to speak		spoken
aimer	to like, love		liked, loved

marcher	to walk, march	(like donné)	walked, marched
manger	to eat		eaten
déjeuner	to eat breakfast		eaten breakfast
désirer	to wish		wished
commander	to order		ordered

---

voir	to see	**vu**	seen
vouloir	to want, wish	**voulu**	wished
pouvoir	to be able	**pu**	been able
savoir	to know	**su**	known
boire	to drink	**bu**	drunk
avoir	to have	**eu**	had
être	to be	**été**	been
dire	to say	**dit**	said
écrire	to write	**écrit**	written

EXERCISE

Translate:

1. Je n'ai pas trouvé la lettre.
2. J'ai apporté vos livres.
3. J'ai écrit beaucoup de lettres.
4. Je n'ai pas voulu le dire.
5. J'ai accepté avec grand plaisir.
6. Notre voyage (*trip*) a été long.
7. Nous avons eu un long voyage.
8. J'ai vu les beaux cheveux de la femme.
9. Nous n'avons pas tout vu.
10. Avez-vous parlé de moi?
11. Mon père a eu tort.
12. Non, il n'a pas eu tort; j'ai eu tort.
13. Elle ne vous a pas vu.
14. Nous lui avons parlé de vous dans toutes nos lettres.
15. Vous avez eu raison de venir.

16. Ma sœur vous a écrit.
17. Elle ne m'a pas dit un mot.
18. C'est vous qui m'avez écrit.
19. Ils ont vu mon frère.
20. Je n'ai jamais pu fumer.
21. Garçon, je n'ai pas commandé du vin. Je ne veux que de l'eau.
22. Nous n'avons jamais bu du vin chez nous.
23. J'ai déjeuné il y a trois heures.
24. Vous avez marché trop vite, n'est-ce pas?
25. Il n'a jamais mangé du fromage.

Give, for practice, in French the following expressions, using all three persons, both singular and plural:

1. I have never seen, you have never seen etc.
2. I love only you, you love only me, he loves only you, we love only her, you love only him, they love only me.
3. I have spoken to nobody, you have spoken to nobody, etc.
4. I did not write any more, you did not write any more, etc.
5. I have written nothing etc.
6. I did not have any money, etc.
7. I have not drunk any wine, etc.
8. Have I been able to do it (use **est-ce**)?
9. I have not been ill, etc.
10. Did I say it, etc.

LESSON XXV

VERBS THAT TAKE THE AUXILIARY **être**

Though the number of verbs that have **être** as auxiliary is not great, you will see from the verbs given below

that the list includes words in very common use. You must, therefore, study them carefully.

Hereafter, unless the verb is absolutely regular (like **parler**) both infinitive and the past participle will be given in the vocabulary. Remember that unless otherwise stated the auxiliary is **avoir.**

VOCABULARY

Some verbs that have **être** as auxiliary:

Infinitives		*Past Participles*	
arriver	to arrive	The present tense of these verbs is like the present of **parler,** and the past participle is formed the same: **arrivé,** etc.	
entrer	to go in		
rentrer	to return		
rester	to remain		
tomber	to fall		
partir	to leave, depart	**parti**	left, departed
sortir	to go out	**sorti**	gone out
(present like **partir**)			
aller	to go	**allé**	gone
venir	to come	**venu**	come
(present has been given)			
mourir	to die	**mort**	dead
(present given below)			

PRESENT OF **mourir**

je meurs		**nous mourons**
tu meurs	[murr]	**vous mourez**
il meurt		**ils meurent**

Agreement of the Participle. A participle is a verbal adjective. Every past participle has endings like an adjective, to show gender and number. For instance, *masc. sing.* **arrivé,** *fem. sing.* **arrivée,** *masc. plur.* **arrivés,** *fem. plur.* **arrivées.**

When the past participle is used with **avoir** to form the present perfect tense, it does not change in form

ordinarily. (One exception to this general rule will be given later.)

When the past participle is used with **être** to form the present perfect tense, as in the verbs listed above, the participle does change in form, agreeing in gender and number with the subject of the verb.

Even with **avoir,** if the object comes before the verb, as is the case with some pronouns, the past participle then agrees with the object in gender and number. (This is the exception referred to above.)

The endings of the participle are a little complex. If you are an ambitious and at the same time a conscientious student you will learn the correct usage. You can do this by reading the rules just given very carefully, and then seeing how they apply in the French sentences, noticing every participle, looking to see whether it is used with **avoir** or **être**, noticing whether it has an ending to denote gender or number, deciding with what it agrees.

If you haven't the patience for this, it will comfort you to know that these endings will never bother you in reading French, nor in speaking French, as the four forms of the participle are pronounced exactly the same. Even in writing French you would be understood if you were so careless as to leave off the endings.

PRESENT PERFECT OF **arriver**

je suis arrivé	I arrived, I have arrived
tu es arrivé	you arrived, you have arrived
il est arrivé	he arrived, he has arrived
elle est arrivée	she arrived, she has arrived
nous sommes arrivés	we arrived, we have arrived
vous êtes arrivés	you arrived, you have arrived
ils sont arrivés **elles sont arrivées**	they arrived, they have arrived

EXERCISES

Translate:

1. L'homme est arrivé.
2. La femme est arrivée.
3. La lettre est arrivée.
4. Le lit est arrivé.
5. La femme dit: "Je suis venue, monsieur."
6. Ma sœur n'est pas encore venue.
7. Le jour est venu.
8. Les lettres ne sont pas encore arrivées.
9. Ils sont partis.
10. Ils sont venus m'inviter à dîner.
11. Je suis sorti un moment.
12. Je suis sortie un moment.
13. Après le souper je suis allé au cinéma.
14. Il est venu voir ma mère.
15. Nous sommes partis de la maison il y a trois heures.
16. Je suis rentré tard.
17. Ils savent pourquoi (*why*) je suis venue.
18. Nous sommes rentrés chez nous aujourd'hui.
19. Je suis allé faire visite à mes amis.
20. Il n'y a qu'un an que nous sommes partis.

In the following sentences you may see how the participle with **avoir** agrees with the object, when the object precedes the participle:

1. La femme est belle. Je l'ai vue chez ma mère.
2. La femme dit: "Il m'a vue souvent."
3. Il y a des jolies femmes en France. Je les ai vues.
4. Ces jours sont les plus terribles que j'ai passés.
   (Participle agrees with **que,** which agrees with the word it refers to, **jours.**)
5. J'ai vu les soldats. Je les ai regardés de la fenêtre.

LESSON XXVI

REVIEW. VERB DRILL

connaître	**connu**	know	je connais	nous connaissons
			tu connais	vous connaissez
			il connaît	ils connaissent
écrire	**écrit**	write	j'écris	nous écrivons
			tu écris	vous écrivez
			il écrit	ils écrivent
finir	**fini**	finish	je finis	nous finissons
			tu finis	vous finissez
			il finit	ils finissent
recevoir	**reçu**	receive	je reçois	nous recevons
			tu reçois	vous recevez
			il reçoit	ils reçoivent
mettre	**mis**	put	je mets	nous mettons
			tu mets	vous mettez
			il met	ils mettent

Study all the forms of all the verbs you have had up to this time.

EXERCISE

1. They are dying of (**de**) hunger.
2. I have seen the women.
3. I have seen them (the women).
4. The women have come.
5. They do not wish to do it.
6. Have you seen the house?
7. I have never seen it (house).
8. All the children read your books.
9. My brother left today.
10. The children have gone out.
11. I am going to look for them.
12. Stay here.

13. They are going to return at once.
14. The woman has died.
15. He cannot see me.
16. I have not been able to do it.
17. He has been walking rapidly.
18. I have put some money on the table.
19. I have received the letters.
20. I have received them (the letters).
21. We know them.
22. Hunt for the books.
23. We have already found them.
24. My sister has stayed here.
25. He is not going to come.
26. I have written lots of (**beaucoup de**) letters.
27. Listen to the children.
28. I am listening to them.
29. Tell me what (**ce que**) you are doing.
30. We saw the children.
31. We saw them at (**à**) the window.

LESSON XXVII

ADJECTIVES

Review

grand, petit, joli, vrai, ouvert, rond, froid, chaud, content, bleu all form the feminine by adding **-e**, the plural by adding **-s.**

sale, propre, malade, brave, are same in masculine and feminine.

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*
beau, bel	belle	beaux	beaux
gros	grosse	gros	grosses

bon	bonne	bons	bonnes
tout	toute	tous	toutes
dernier	dernière	derniers	dernières

Learn these adjectives thoroughly, in all their forms.

SINGULAR		PLURAL		
Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
cher	chère	chers	chères	dear, expensive
frais	fraîche	frais	fraîches	fresh, cool
heureux	heureuse	heureux	heureuses	happy, fortunate
malheureux etc.				unfortunate
nombreux	nombreuse	nombreux	nombreuses	numerous
triste	triste	tristes	tristes	sad
riche	riche	riches	riches	rich
jeune	jeune	jeunes	jeunes	young
vieux	†vieille	vieux	†vieilles	old
gentil	gentille	gentils	gentilles	nice, pleasant
rouge	rouge	rouges	rouges	red
blanc	blanche	blancs	blanches	white
noir	(regular)			black
vert	(regular)			green
†**meilleur**	(regular)			better
le †**meilleur**				the best
mieux	(adverb)			better
le **mieux**	(adverb)			best

COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

Study the following sentences until you understand the way the French express ideas of comparison,—beautiful, more beautiful, most beautiful, etc.

Il est le plus riche des deux—He is the richer of the two.

Il est le plus riche de tous—He is the richest of all.

Il est encore plus riche que l'année dernière.—He is even richer than last year.

Il est aussi riche que son frère—He is as rich as his brother.

Il n'est pas aussi riche que son frère—He is not so rich as his brother *or*

Il n'est pas si riche que son frère—He is not so rich as his brother. (Use **si** only in negative sentences) *or*

Il n'est pas riche comme son frère—He is not rich like his brother *or*

Il est moins riche que son frère.—He is not so rich (less rich) as his brother.

In the following sentences you have further examples of this construction. Never forget that the best way of learning to write a language, or to speak a language, is by carefully and consciously imitating the sentences that are given you in that language. Especially in a language like French, which is so full of odd little ways of saying things, which we call idioms, rules are of no great use. On the other hand, if you will remember not to be impatient because French isn't English, and if you will look curiously and interestedly at these numberless idioms, you will come to like them.

EXERCISE

1. Mademoiselle est infiniment plus jolie que toutes les femmes de sa nation que j'ai jamais vues.
2. Elle désire tout ce qu'il y a de plus beau et de plus cher.
3. Jamais les Boches n'ont été plus calmes.
4. J'ai trouvé ici de l'eau plus fraîche.
5. Je veux montrer la plus grande affection.

6. Les plus grands saints ont eu leurs petites faiblesses (weaknesses).
7. Vous avez de meilleurs yeux que moi.
8. Il n'y a rien de meilleur au monde que Jean.
9. Il est un des meilleurs amis de votre père.
10. Je ne peux rien désirer de plus heureux pour mon fils.
11. Il est un des hommes les plus intellectuels de ce temps.
12. Ce jeune homme a fait sur moi la plus heureuse impression.
13. Vous voilà les meilleurs amis du monde.
14. Le plus tendre des pères n'a jamais aimé d'un meilleur cœur le plus cher de ses enfants.
15. La plus française de nos colonies, c'est le Canada —qui n'est plus à nous.
16. La plus nombreuse, la plus riche, la plus brillante, c'est la colonie américaine.
17. De tous le plus heureux, c'est mon père.
18. La plus charmante des deux, c'est votre sœur.
19. Nous avons mangé de la salade; c'est ce que j'aime le mieux.
20. Est-ce que vous voulez m'accompagner? — Un autre jour; aujourd'hui, j'aime mieux rester.

EXERCISE

Write the following phrases, with their modifying adjectives, and then compare them with the correct forms in the Appendix. You will not get them all in exactly the same order as in the Appendix, but you should make few mistakes in endings. — It is most desirable that you study your mistakes carefully, and then try writing the list again.

1. A large garden

2. The last hour
3. Every day
4. His little church
5. His little village
6. An unfortunate woman
7. With his young friend (fem.)—With his friend (fem.)
8. Red hair
9. White shoulders
10. To (à) the poor people
11. The portrait of his old mother
12. The son of a poor woman
13. At the house of my dear old friend (fem.)
14. Large black eyes
15. Your little kitchen
16. With (à) white hair
17. Hands wide (grand) open
18. A glass of fresh water
19. Her beautiful black hair
20. Poor, dear man
21. With their eyes wide open
22. A worthy woman
23. A tall young man
24. The whole street
25. Mouth open
26. His little red nose
27. The best man in the world
28. My dear friends (masc.)

LESSON XXVIII

TIME OF DAY

After a careful study of the following expressions, you will know how to give in French any ordinary expression, telling what time it is.

EXAMPLES

Quelle heure est-il?	What time is it?
Il est une heure.	It is one o'clock.
Il est une heure et demie.	It is half past one.
Il est trois heures.	It is three o'clock.
Il est trois heures et un quart.	It is a quarter after three.
Il est cinq heures moins un quart.	It is a quarter to five.
Il est six heures six (minutes).	It is six minutes after six.
Il est sept heures cinquante-cinq.	It is five minutes to eight.
Il est minuit et demi.	It is half past twelve at night.
Il est midi un quart.	It is a quarter after twelve, noon.
A neuf heures du soir.	At nine P. M. (*or* At nine o'clock at night)
A quelle heure?	At what hour?
A neuf heures précises.	At nine sharp.
A une heure précise.	At one sharp.
Vers dix heures.	About, or toward ten o'clock.
Il est quatre heures quarante *or* Il est cinq heures moins vingt.	It is 4:40.
Il est quatre heures quarante-cinq *or* Il est cinq heures moins un quart.	It is 4:45.
Il est cinq heures du matin.	It is five A. M.
Il est trois heures de l'après-midi.	It is three P. M.
Il est neuf heures du soir.	It is nine P. M.
Il est midi.	It is noon.

Il est **minuit.**	It is midnight.
Minuit sonne.	It is striking midnight.
Dix heures sonnent.	It is striking ten.
Une demi-heure.	A half hour, half an hour
Trois heures **et demie.**	Three and a half hours

VOCABULARY

le **quart** [car]	quarter	**vers**	toward, about
le **demi**	half	**demain**	tomorrow
demi, demie *adj.*	half	le **lendemain**	next day
la **demi-heure**	half hour	le **lendemain matin**	next morning
le **midi**	noon	la **minute**	minute
l'**heure** *f.*	hour	**après-demain**	day after tomorrow
l'**après-midi** *m.*	afternoon	**hier**	yesterday
de l'**après-midi**	P. M., in the afternoon	**jusque**	till, until
le **minuit**	midnight	**jusqu'à**	until
le **soir**	evening	**précis, e**	sharp
du **soir**	P.M., in the evening	**de bonne heure**	early
le **matin**	morning	**tout à l'heure**	just now, a little while ago, soon
du **matin**	A.M., in the morning	**y**	there
revenir	come back, return		
il faut	it is necessary		

EXERCISES

Write in French: (Do not omit **heure**)

1. 12:45 A. M.
2. 12:15 A. M.
3. 1:10
4. 2:20
5. 3:30
6. 4:40
7. 5:50
8. At six sharp.
9. At one sharp.
10. It is 5:55 P. M.

11. It is twenty minutes to eight.
12. It is a quarter to nine.
13. It is 9:45.
14. It is one P. M.
15. It is ten P. M.
16. What time is it?

Translate:

1. A quelle heure allez-vous au château?
2. Moi, j'y vais aujourd'hui, à quatre heures.
3. Vous partez demain pour le camp?
4. Oui, demain.
5. De bonne heure?
6. A cinq heures du matin.
7. Nous aussi, nous allons partir.
8. Vous?
9. Oui, nous avons reçu, il y a une heure, une lettre de mon frère. Il revient dans douze jours; il s'embarque (goes on board) après-demain matin à New York. Nous allons le voir au Havre. Nous partons après-demain.
10. Vous restez là-bas combien de temps?
11. Vingt jours.
12. Nous allons dormir (sleep) bien tranquillement jusqu'à dix heures du matin.
13. Dans une demi-heure il va partir, partir pour dix jours. Cinq heures moins un quart! Le régiment part à cinq heures. Elle veut le voir.
14. Nous dînons à six heures et demie, bien exactement. Ce soir, à sept heures et demie, ma sœur arrive.
15. Monsieur, il est sept heures un quart.
16. Sept heures un quart! Oh, mesdames, excusez-moi, s'il vous plaît. Ma sœur arrive ce soir, et je vais aller à la gare.
17. Et le train, à quelle heure exactement arrive-t-il?

18. A sept heures et demie. Il ne me faut que dix minutes pour arriver à la gare.
19. Le lendemain, à cinq heures et demie, nous sommes arrivés chez nous.
20. Je viens vous faire mes adieux. Je pars dans deux heures.

LESSON XXIX

EN

En is a convenient little word, freely used by the French as a substitute for **de** and an object. **En** is most frequently translated *of it, of them.*

Sometimes we easily understand what **en** stands for, other times it is less easy to understand. It is usually easy to recognize:

(1) When used with numerals.
Combien de chaises y-a-t-il?
Il y en a deux.

(2) When used as a substitute for the **de** meaning "some" or "any".
Avez-vous mangé du pain?
J'en ai mangé, merci.

(3) Used with nouns and adjectives which are regularly followed by **de.**
J'ai besoin d'encouragement.
J'en ai besoin.
Je suis content de votre amour.
J'en suis content.
J'ai beaucoup de pain.
J'en ai beaucoup.

(4) Used with verbs which are regularly followed by **de.**

J'ai parlé de votre absence.
J'en ai parlé.

In many other phrases the **en** is as reasonable when one studies the sentence with the facts of the language at his command, but it is not so clear at a glance. Take the phrase **Je vous en prie** — "I beg of you", **prier** is a verb followed by **de**, if the thought is complete. **Je vous prie de m'excuser** changes easily into **Je vous en prie.** The puzzling **en** then, in **Je vous en prie** stands always for the thing asked, which is not expressed.

If you care to understand **en,** and are not willing to take it merely as a little decoration in a sentence, you will find it a help to examine it with some attention whenever it occurs for a few weeks, trying to see just what it is doing in the sentence. In the sentences that follow, see if you can tell whether the **en** would be classed in group one, two, three, or four, as given above.

EXERCISE

1. Est-ce que vous voyez tous les soldats? Je n'en vois que trois.
2. J'ai tué (shot) deux Boches, et j'en suis fier (proud).
3. Mon fils est maintenant sous-lieutenant. J'en suis content.
4. Vous avez le droit (right) de savoir. Non, je n'en ai pas le droit.
5. Il y en a deux qui vous cherchent.
6. N'en parlons plus.
7. Et vous ne m'en avez rien dit.
8. Je n'ai jamais pu en parler à personne.
9. Il y a des biscuits pour moi, il n'y en a plus pour vous.
10. Voulez-vous de l'argent? J'en ai assez, mon père.

11. J'en parle avec respect.
12. Vous pouvez en être persuadé.
13. Est-ce que tu crois (think) en savoir plus que ta mère.
14. Il dit de son ami tout le bien qu'il en pense.
15. J'ai déjà vu bien des jeunes gens. Oh! oui, j'en ai vu.
16. J'ai des morceaux de sucre. J'en ai mis cinq ou six dans ma poche.
17. Si je prends le nom, c'est que j'en ai le droit.
18. De la neige (snow)! Elle commence à tomber, nous en avons encore pour toute la nuit.

EXERCISE

Write in French the English sentences, getting any suggestions you can from the French sentences immediately preceding:

1. Nous sommes bien sûrs d'avoir la victoire.
   We are going to have a victory. We are quite sure of that.
2. Je suis heureux d'avoir vu votre mère.
   I saw your mother. I am glad of it.
3. Je suis curieux de savoir où il est.
   I do not know where he is. I am curious about it.
4. Tous sont si contents d'avoir bien travaillé.
   They have worked well. They are pleased at it.
5. Je m'en doute de votre amour.
   I love you a lot. Do not doubt it.

LESSON XXX

VERBS

From now on the chief business of the student is to learn verbs. You have had two tenses, the present and

the present perfect. You should be quite sure of the infinitive form and of the past participle of every verb that you have had; you should know which auxiliary each verb requires, whether **avoir** or **être.** You should thoroughly know the present tense of each. The present is the most irregular and difficult of the tenses.

TENSES

Today you are to learn the imperfect and the past perfect tenses.

The imperfect tense expresses past time. It is used:

(1) To express continued action, as "I *was hunting for* a four leaf clover."

(2) To express habitual action or state, as "I was sick most of the time" — "I always wanted him to educate the boy".

(3) In ordinary narration, when describing a situation or state of affairs. (A single, unrelated *act* in the past is not imperfect. If you do not understand this, do not worry. You will in time.)

The present perfect tense, which you have been using, is confined largely to conversation.

The past perfect tense corresponds exactly to the English "I had arrived." It is easy to form, and easy to understand. It is formed by the past participle and the imperfect of **avoir** or **être.** The same rules apply in the past perfect that you had in the present perfect as to whether the auxiliary is **avoir** or **être,** and as to the agreement of participles.

The endings of the imperfect are the same in all verbs, no matter how irregular the verb is. The tense is, therefore, not a difficult one to learn.

IMPERFECT TENSE

Endings	**être**		**avoir**	
-ais	**j'étais**	I was	**j'avais**	I had
-ais	**tu étais**	you were	**tu avais**	you had
-ait	**il était**	he was	**il avait**	he had
-ions	**nous étions**	we were	**nous avions**	we had
-iez	**vous étiez**	you were	**vous aviez**	you had
-aient	**ils étaient**	they were	**ils avaient**	they had

PAST PERFECT

être (past part. **été**)

j'avais été	I had been	**nous avions été**	we had been
tu avais été	you had been	**vous aviez été**	you had been
il avait été	he had been	**ils avaient été**	they had been

avoir (past part. **eu**)

j'avais eu	I had had	**nous avions eu**	we had had
tu avais eu	you had had	**vous aviez eu**	you had had
il avait eu	he had had	**ils avaient eu**	they had had

Past perfect of **parler** —**J'avais parlé** I had spoken
Past perfect of **arriver**—**J'étais arrivé** I had arrived

EXERCISES

Translate: (Remember every past perfect requires in translating the word *had*).

1. Il est midi. Il était midi.
2. Il n'a pas d'eau. Il n'avait pas d'eau.
3. Nous n'avons pas de pain. Nous n'avions pas de pain.
4. Ils n'ont pas de viande. Ils n'avaient pas de viande.
5. Vous n'avez pas de légumes. Vous n'aviez pas de légumes.
6. Je n'ai pas trouvé la lettre. Je n'avais pas trouvé la lettre.

7. Nous n'avons pas tout vu. Nous n'avions pas tout vu.
8. L'homme est arrivé. L'homme était arrivé.
9. La lettre était arrivée. La lettre est arrivée.
10. Ils sont partis. Ils étaient partis.
11. La femme est belle. Je l'ai vue chez ma mère. Je l'avais vue chez ma mère.

Translate:

1. Quel âge a-t-il? Il a quatorze ans.
2. Quel âge avait-il? Il avait quatorze ans.
3. Combien de soldats y-avait-il? Il y en avait dix.
4. La femme n'était plus là.
5. Elle était à la fenêtre de la cuisine, au rez-de-chaussée.
6. Tout le reste n'était qu'une question d'argent.
7. Il était heureux de la voir heureuse.
8. Il était un très gentil petit garçon de six ans.
9. Elle était une très jolie petite fille de cinq ans.
10. Ils avaient les grands yeux noirs de leur mère et ses cheveux dorés (golden).

Translate:

1. Ils n'avaient pas vu les femmes chez elles.
2. Il n'avait pas beaucoup fumé.
3. Son fils était parti pour la guerre (war).
4. J'avais mangé du jambon avec lui.
5. J'avais mis le fusil (gun) à quelque (some) distance de son lit.
6. Nous étions entrés dans le salon.
7. Il y avait une femme assassinée.
8. Elle était allée à la ville.
9. Les Français étaient arrivés.
10. Il était allé voir les soldats.

LESSON XXXI

IMPERFECT TENSE (Continued)

The imperfect of **parler** is **je parlais** etc.

	parl-er	
je parl-ais	**je parlais**	I spoke, I was speaking
tu parl-ais	**tu parlais**	you spoke, you were speaking
il parl-**ait**	**il parlait**	he spoke, he was speaking
nous parl-**ions**	**nous parlions**	we spoke, we were speaking
vous parl-**iez**	**vous parliez**	you spoke, you were speaking
ils parl-**aient**	**ils parlaient**	they spoke, they were speaking

All verbs that have the present tense like **parler,** have the imperfect tense formed as above.

The verbs **partir, sortir, venir, mourir, dormir, — pouvoir, savoir, vouloir, recevoir, — mettre, — aller** (all of which you have had) form the imperfect by cutting off the infinitive endings **-ir, -oir, -re,** and **-er** and adding the usual endings of the imperfect.

The following verbs have imperfects for which you must learn the first person singular. The other persons are then formed on this by the usual change of endings:

boire —**buvais** (imperfect, 1st. sing.)
connaître —**connaissais**
dire —**disais**
écrire —**écrivais**
faire —**faisais**
lire —**lisais**

voir	**—voyais**
finir	**—finissais**

VOCABULARY

le **pays**	country	**penser**	think
le **coin**	corner	**s'arrêter**	stop
le **franc**	franc (French coin, about 20 cents)	(aux. **être**) **passer** (like **partir**)	pass, spend
du tout	at all		
la **fleur**	flower	**dormir**	sleep
alors	then, at that time	**promettre**	promise
elle-même	(she) herself	(like mettre)	
honnête	honest	**répondre** (like **mettre**)	answer

EXERCISE

Translate:

1. Depuis six mois il cherchait et ne trouvait rien.
2. Elles voulaient dîner chez lui.
3. Il ne savait plus du tout où il en était.
4. Il venait chercher son fils.
5. Elle était morte.
6. J'en parlais avec respect.
7. Il était évident que mon frère voulait me parler.
8. J'étais jeune alors, et je pensais toujours au pays.
9. Elle avait une fleur dans le coin de la bouche.
10. Ses amis étaient là. Il y en avait cinq.
11. Jamais il n'avait eu deux mille francs en sa possession.
12. Il ne trouvait rien à répondre.
13. De cette famille il ne restait plus qu'un enfant, qui promettait d'être, ce qu'avait été son grand-père et ce qu'avait été son père, honnête et bon.
14. Il s'arrêtait, soupait chez son ami.

15. Il aimait sa petite église, son petit village.
16. Elle l'aimait trop.
17. Il ne passait à Paris que trois ou quatre mois.
18. Il l'aimait beaucoup — un peu plus qu'elle-même ne l'aimait. Lui, elle l'aimait bien, et voilà tout. Il y a une grande difference entre *bien* et *beaucoup* quand ces deux adverbes sont placés après le verbe *aimer*.

EXERCISE

Translate into French:

1. We had said.
2. You were.
3. They are not dying.
4. He has come.
5. You had gone.
6. They go out.
7. I have left.
8. You have fallen.
9. You were not acquainted.
10. They had come.
11. Am I arriving?
12. Don't we have them?
13. You had been having.
14. We drank not.
15. They were not coming.
16. They had gone.
17. You see them.
18. They haven't written.
19. We were staying.
20. You are acquainted with him.
21. They had drunk.
22. You had died.
23. I have not had.
24. I am not drinking.
25. I did not know.
26. We had been able.
27. He did not wish.
28. They did not see us.
29. You had been writing.
30. I received.
31. He has not written.
32. They have not finished.
33. We have put.
34. Was he not saying?
35. They have been.
36. Don't you know?
37. They have been able.
38. I was not going out.
39. You left.
40. We had been falling.
41. You have not received.
42. We were entering.
43. They were putting.

44. I had arrived.
45. He is coming in.
46. You have drunk.
47. We are coming.
48. They had gone out.
49. She was falling.
50. I have been acquainted with him.
51. We have died.
52. I had been.
53. He was dying.
54. You could.
55. She had seen.
56. They are receiving.
57. She had stayed.
58. We had not known.
59. You don't say.
60. They had gone out.

LESSON XXXII

VERBS

FUTURE TENSE

être		avoir	
je serai	I shall be	**j'aurai**	I shall have
tu seras	you will be	**tu auras**	you will have
il sera	he will be	**il aura**	he will have
nous serons	we shall be	**nous aurons**	we shall have
vous serez	you will be	**vous aurez**	you will have
ils seront	they will be	**ils auront**	they will have

parler

je parlerai	I shall speak	**nous parlerons**	we shall speak
tu parleras	etc.	**vous parlerez**	etc.
il parlera		**ils parleront**	

The *future tense*, like the imperfect, is absolutely regular as to endings:

Singular	*Plural*
-ai	**-ons**
-as	**-ez**
-a	**-ont**

In verbs like **parler** these endings are added to the

infinitive. In most verbs having infinitives in **-ir,** the endings are added to the infinitive: **finir — finirai.** In verbs ending in **-re,** the final **-e** is dropped. This change is so obviously necessary that no further explanation is needed. For instance: **boire — boirai; écrire — écrirai; mettre — mettrai.**

Unless the future is formed as described above, you will be given the first person. The other persons you then form by the usual changes in endings.

Learn the following irregular futures:

aller — **irai**
faire — **ferai**
mourir — **mourrai**
pouvoir — **pourrai**
savoir — **saurai**
venir — **viendrai**
voir — **verrai**
vouloir — **voudrai**
recevoir — **recevrai**

EXERCISES

Write in French: (You should study your verbs till you think you can write them from memory, without constantly looking back for information.)

1. he will finish
2. we shall put
3. he will make
4. they will give
5. he will know
6. they will come
7. he will work
8. they will see
9. she will remain
10. you will put
11. I shall be able
12. he will sleep
13. we shall drink
14. he will wish
15. they will receive
16. I shall go
17. he will write
18. they will think
19. he will go
20. you will say

Translate:

1. Tu viendras me voir souvent, mon enfant.
2. Non, ma mère, je resterai avec vous.
3. Le précepteur de mon fils est un jeune homme très distingué; il fera travailler nos deux enfants.
4. Tout sera pour le mieux.
5. Jean donnera le bon exemple à Paul.
6. Vous aurez de l'argent, beaucoup d'argent pour vos pauvres.
7. Dans le salon je trouverai cette Américaine aux cheveux rouges.
8. J'irai au château certainement — pour mes pauvres.
9. J'irai — et elle m'en donnera, de l'argent, mais elle ne me donnera que de l'argent.
10. Ma vieille amie donnait de sa vie (life) et de son cœur.
11. Nous allions ensemble (together) toutes les semaines, visiter les pauvres et les malades.
12. Elle connaissait toutes les misères du pays.
13. Vous serez content de moi.
14. Je vous donnerai cinq cents francs tous les mois.
15. Et je ferai comme ma sœur.
16. Mille francs par mois! Mais alors il n'y aura plus de pauvres dans le pays.
17. Mon père sera trop heureux, si vous voulez dîner chez nous.
18. Vous serez indulgentes, mesdames.
19. Je viendrai le plus tôt (soon) possible.
20. Il y aura place dans votre cœur pour tous, — pour votre mari, pour vos enfants, et pour moi. C'est tout petit, le cœur, et c'est très grand.

LESSON XXXIII

NUMERALS — NAMES OF MONTHS — DAYS OF WEEK

Review Lesson XXII, Numerals; Lesson XXVIII, Time of Day.

Learn the following ordinals:

premier,	first	**septième** [p silent]	seventh
première		**huitième**	eighth
deuxième [x like z]	second	**neuvième**	ninth
second,	second	**dixième** [x like z]	tenth
seconde [c like gh]		**onzième**	eleventh
troisième	third	**douzième**	twelfth
quatrième	fourth	**dix-neuvième**	nineteenth
cinquième	fifth	**vingtième**	twentieth
sixième [x like z]	sixth	**vingt et unième**	twenty-first
		vingt-deuxième	twenty-second

(Say **le onzième, la onzième** — not **l'onzième.**)

Learn the names of the months:

janvier [zhan-vee-ay] *m.*	**juillet** [zhee-ee-ay] *m.*
février [fay-vree-ay] *m.*	**août** [oo] *m.*
mars [rhyme with farce] *m.*	**septembre** *m.*
avril [ah-vreel] *m.*	**octobre** *m.*
mai [may] *m.*	**novembre** *m.*
juin [zhee-an] *m.*	**décembre** *m.*

Learn the names of the days of the week:

dimanche [dee-mansh] *m.*	Sunday
lundi *m.*	Monday
mardi *m.*	Tuesday
mercredi *m.*	Wednesday
jeudi *m.*	Thursday
vendredi *m.*	Friday
samedi *m.*	Saturday

In French neither the names of the months, nor of the days of the week begin with capital letters. Be careful not to slip into this custom in writing English.

EXERCISE

Le douzième mois de l'an est décembre.
Le septième jour de la semaine est dimanche.

Write:

1. The first month of the year is January.
2. The second month of the year is February.
3. The third month of the year is March.
4. The fourth month of the year is April.
5. The fifth month of the year is May.
6. The sixth month of the year is June.
7. The seventh month of the year is July.
8. The eighth month of the year is August.
9. The ninth month of the year is September.
10. The tenth month of the year is October.
11. The eleventh month of the year is November.
12. The twelfth month of the year is December.
13. The first day of the week is Monday.
14. The second day of the week is Tuesday.
15. The third day of the week is Wednesday.

etc.

DATES

Le premier septembre —the first of September, September first
Le deux septembre —the second of September, September second
Le trente mai —the thirtieth of May
Le quatre juin —June fourth
Le vingt-cinq décembre—the twenty-fifth of December

In using first, second, etc. to designate days of the month, write **premier** to mean first, but use cardinals

deux, trois, quatre, etc. for all the others.

Study carefully the following sentences, and turn to them as models whenever you are puzzled as to how to give the various expressions of time:

Quel jour du mois sera-ce demain?	What day of the month will tomorrow be?
Demain, ce sera le vingt-deux.	Tomorrow will be the twenty-second.
Hier, c'était le quatre juillet.	Yesterday was the fourth of July.
Quel jour du mois est-ce aujourd'hui?	What day of the month is today? What's the date? What day of the month is it?
C'est aujourd'hui le trente et un.	Today is the thirty-first.
Le vingt-deux février.	On the twenty-second of February.
Il est arrivé samedi.	He arrived on Saturday.
Nous les avons vus lundi.	We saw them on Monday.

(Notice the French uses no preposition. The English omits it at will.)

Il y a trois jours.	Three days ago.
Il y a huit jours.	A week ago.
Il y a quinze jours.	Two weeks ago.
(En) l'an mil soixante-six.	(In) 1066 A. D.
L'an quatorze cent quatre-vingt-douze.	1492
En seize cent vingt.	In 1620
En dix-sept cent quatre-vingt-neuf.	In 1789
En dix-sept cent soixante-seize.	In 1776

EXERCISE

1. Répétez les noms des six premiers mois de l'année.
2. Quels sont les noms des six derniers mois de l'année?
3. Quels sont les mois qui n'ont que trente jours?
4. Le mois de février combien de jours a-t-il?
5. Quel jour du mois sommes-nous aujourd'hui?
6. Quel jour du mois serons-nous demain?
7. Qui est mort le 29 décembre 1799?
8. Répétez-moi (repeat to me) les mois de l'année.
9. Quel jour de la semaine est-ce?
10. Est-ce que le deux février est un jour de fête?

Write, and correct by the Appendix:

1. I shall return Wednesday, May 18, at one o'clock.
2. Every Thursday and every Sunday we have dinner at mother's.
3. He had died November 14, at seven o'clock in the morning.
4. We shall arrive on Saturday, May 28, about four o'clock in the afternoon.
5. I saw her one Friday evening in (de) the month of November.

LESSON XXXIV

THE INDEFINITE **on**
Faire WITH INFINITIVE
Prendre — lire

Prendre, to take Past participle, **pris**
Imperfect, **je prenais**

PRESENT TENSE

je prends, tu prends, il prend nous prenons, vous prenez, ils prennent

Lire—to read (Imperfect) **lisais** (Past participle) **lu**

PRESENT TENSE

je lis, tu lis, il lit nous lisons, vous lisez, ils lisent

The verb **faire,** when followed by an infinitive, has the meaning *to make, to cause, to have.* Example: **Fais donc venir les Américaines.** — Just have the Americans come — Call in the Americans.

THE GENERALIZING PRONOUN **on**

People say he is crazy.
You never can tell.
One would suppose she would know better.
They say she is in a critical condition.
We do not do that sort of thing nowadays.

In the sentences above you will notice that the English expresses the indefinite idea of *someone, any one* (no definite person referred to) in various ways, — by *we, you, they, one, people,* etc. The French expresses this idea by the word **on** with the third person singular of the verb.

On ne peut pas — It is impossible (one cannot).

On ne passe pas — They shall not pass (one does not pass).

On vient me chercher — They are coming to look for me (one comes to look for me).

On voyait qu'elle le comprenait — One saw that she understood it.

On m'y connaît — I am known there (one knows me there).

On le dit — So they say (one says it).

On is also used often instead of the passive.

L'on is the same as **on.**

VOCABULARY

le repos	rest	**comprendre**	understand
la joie	joy		(like **prendre**)

la patrie	native country	**autre**	other
la terre	earth, land	**sentir, se sentir**	feel (like **partir**)
la chose	thing	**jouer**	play
la carte	card, map	**jouer aux cartes**	play cards
le moyen	means	**accepter**	accept
gaiment	gayly, cheerfully	**comme**	as
malheureusement	unfortunately		

Translate:

1. On ne voyait pas les enfants, mais on les écoutait.
2. On a une sensation un peu désagréable.
3. On avait eu un peu d'émotion pour rien.
4. On se sentait assez en sécurité.
5. Tous les jours, à midi, et à minuit, on nous téléphone l'heure.
6. On ne reçoit que du pain et du café.
7. Tout ce que l'on voyait, c'était des villages en ruines.
8. On a eu du thé ce soir, — malheureusement le sucre était peu abondant.
9. On est là pour cela (that), et l'on accepte la chose gaiment. (Note the **l'on** after **et.**)
10. C'est une joie immense de se dire que l'on travaille pour la patrie. (Note the **l'on** after **que.**)
11. On dort, on lit, on joue aux cartes.
12. On est heureux de se sentir encore sur cette terre.
13. Nos soldats prenaient du repos.
14. Je vais vous faire savoir que vous êtes imprudent.
15. Les hommes dans leurs abris (dugouts) fumaient tranquillement leurs pipes, dormaient, mangeaient, jouaient aux cartes, lisaient.

16. A neuf heures il venait me faire savoir que ma mère désirait me voir.
17. Je le ferai entrer.
18. Quand on a beaucoup d'argent, quand on a trop d'argent, quand on a plus que cela n'est juste, dites, monsieur l'abbé, pour se le faire pardonner, y a-t-il d'autre moyens que de toujours avoir les mains grandes ouvertes et de donner, de donner, de donner le plus possible et le mieux possible?

LESSON XXXV

THE CONDITIONAL MOOD

PRESENT CONDITIONAL OF **être**

je se-r-ais I should or would be
tu se-r-ais you would be
il se-r-ait he would be
nous se-r-ions we should or would be
vous se-r-iez you would be
ils se-r-aient they would be

In this conjugation you notice that each verb form appears in three portions. The forms are thus divided to help you in learning the conjugation with the least effort and the least loss of time. Every present conditional has the **r** and the ending you see above. If you learn the

-rais	**-rions**
-rais	**-riez**
-rait	**-raient**

of the conjugation given above, you know the endings of all present conditionals. You learned this **r** in the future

tense. You learned these endings **-ais,** etc. in the imperfect. There are no irregularities in this conjugation except in the spelling of the first part. See how you can form the conditional present from the future:—

Verb	Future	Present Conditional
donner	donnerai	**donnerais** donnerais donnerait donnerions -iez -aient
finir	finirai	**finirais** finirais finirait finirions finiriez finiraient
avoir	aurai	**aurais,** etc.
venir	viendrai	**viendrais,** etc.
aller	irai	**irais**
faire	ferai	**ferais**
savoir	saurai	**saurais**
pouvoir	pourrai	**?**
vouloir	voudrai	**?**
voir	verrai	**?**
mettre	mettrai	**?**
mourir	mourrai	**?**
recevoir	recevrai	**?**

If you drill yourself intensively for five minutes now in filling out the uncompleted conjugations in the list above, you will have no further trouble with the forms of the present conditional. Then you are ready to learn, from the following sentences, what it means:

Je voudrais dîner I should like to dine

Il voudrait vous voir He'd like to see you

Le feriez-vous? Would you do it?

Non, je ne le ferais pas No, I would not do it

Je serais plus confortable chez moi I would be more comfortable at home

Auriez-vous la bonté de me prêter cinq dollars? Would you have the kindness to lend me five dollars?

Je voudrais bien savoir où nous allons I should really like to know where we are going.

USES

While the above uses of the conditional are common enough, the most frequent use is in sentences with the word **si** meaning *if*.

S'il avait le temps, il viendrait—He would come if he had the time.

PAST CONDITIONAL

The conditional has another tense—the past, which offers no difficulties. Notice the following examples:

j'aurais été, etc.	I would have been, etc.
j'aurais eu, etc.	I would have had, etc.
je serais venu, etc.	I would have come, etc.
je serais allé, etc.	I would have gone, etc.
j'aurais donné, etc.	I would have given, etc.

EXERCISE

1. Si j'avais fini mes leçons, je lirais mon livre. 2. Si j'avais du papier, j'écrirais une lettre. 3. Si vous aviez vos livres, qu'est-ce que vous feriez? 4. Si vous aviez beaucoup d'argent, est-ce que vous resteriez chez vous? 5. Que feriez-vous? 6. Iriez-vous à la campagne? 7. J'étudierais toute l'année. 8. J'accepterais votre livre s'il était ici. 9. Pourriez-vous aller à la campagne si vous aviez étudié vos leçons? 10. Voudriez-vous aller avec nous? 11. Dans une heure le château aurait un nouveau maître. 12. Et ce maître qui serait-il? 13. Quelle femme, dans le grand salon, au coin de la cheminée, prendrait la place de madame? 14. Son existence aurait été tolérable si elle n'avait pas tant aimé son mari. 15. Voudriez-vous dîner ici? 16. J'irais bien mais je suis trop connu à Paris.

LESSON XXXVI

Y—Venir de

Venir de with an infinitive has the meaning *just have.* **Je viens de voir votre mère**—I have just seen your mother.

Y is a substitute for **à** (sometimes for **dans**) with an object. The adverb **y** means *there, to that place, in that place* etc. It is not used, as **là** is, to definitely point out a certain place, but rather to refer back to some place (or thing) already mentioned. We say: **Restez là** — *Stay there.* But, in answer to: **Allez-vous au château?** we say: **J'y vais bientôt.**

Y has been used in this book repeatedly in certain very common phrases. Review carefully:

Il y a	There is, there are
Il y en a deux	There are two of them
Il y avait	There was, there were
Il n'y avait pas	There was not
Il y aura	There will be
Il y a trois jours	Three days ago

EXERCISE

Write in French:

1. There was at that time a great war (**la guerre**) in France.
2. In the house there was only a little girl of ten.
3. There are children everywhere (**partout**).
4. Tomorrow there will be some soup.
5. How many rooms are there in the house?
6. There are six of them.
7. Has he much money? He has enough.
8. I have just read a letter that his mother wrote to him three weeks ago.

(See Appendix)

VOCABULARY

le curé	priest	**reprocher à**	reproach
le fermier	farmer	**ouvrir**	open
la clef	key	**ajouter**	add
le plaisir	pleasure	**tenir**	hold, keep
la messe	mass	**fermer**	close
ça	that	**laisser**	leave, let
tout de même	all the same	**empêcher**	prevent
		malicieusement	maliciously, mischievously
là-haut	up there		
si	yes		

ouvrir, to open

(Imperfect) **ouvrais** (Past participle) **ouvert**

(Future) **ouvrirai**

PRESENT TENSE

j'ouvre, tu ouvres, il ouvre
nous ouvrons, vous ouvrez, ils ouvrent

tenir, to hold

(Imperfect) **tenais** (Past participle) **tenu**

(Future) **tiendrai**

PRESENT TENSE

je tiens, tu tiens, il tient
nous tenons, vous tenez, ils tiennent

LE CURÉ DE LONGUEVAL

(Adapted from L'Abbé Constantin)

Le curé reprochait au fermier de ne pas venir à la messe, et le fermier répondait:

—La femme et les filles y vont pour moi . . .

Vous savez bien, monsieur le curé, c'est comme ça chez nous. Les femmes ont de la religion pour les hommes. Elles nous feront ouvrir les portes du paradis.

Et malicieusement il ajoutait:

—S'il y en a un!

—Comment! s'il y en a un? Mais certainement il y en a un!

—Alors vous y serez, monsieur le curé. Vous dites que ce n'est pas sûr.....et moi, je vous dis que si....Vous y serez! Vous y serez! à la porte. Et vous direz à saint Pierre.....car c'est bien saint Pierre, n'est-ce pas, qui tient les clefs du paradis?

—Oui, c'est saint Pierre.

—Eh bien, vous lui direz, à saint Pierre, s'il veut me fermer la porte au nez, sous prétexte que je n'allais pas à la messe, vous lui direz: "Bah! laissez-le passer tout de même.....C'est Bernard, un des fermiers de madame la marquise, un brave homme." Et saint Pierre répondra: "Eh bien, allons, passez, Bernard, mais c'est bien pour faire plaisir à M. le curé." Car vous serez encore curé là-haut, et curé de Longueval. Ce serait trop triste pour vous le paradis, si ça vous empêchait de rester curé de Longueval.

REVIEW

Write in French:

1. She said nothing.
2. People know nothing of all that.
3. You are going to see a sick (person)?
4. You are right.
5. We will go together (**ensemble**) immediately.
6. I have never said anything against (**contre**) you.
7. He does not know how to read. (*Know how* is **savoir** with infinitive).
8. She has seen nothing.
9. I have seen all.
10. I shall tell you the rest (**le reste**) at once.

11. I was listening to him.
12. The soldiers arrived in the evening.
13. I know him well (not **savoir**).
14. Speak no more of all that.
15. I have told you what (**ce que**) I think.
16. I shall not speak of it any more.
17. Make him drink.
18. I feel better.
19. Monsieur knows it very well.
20. I have never seen him.
21. He never answers (**à**) our letters.
22. What does he wish to say?
23. We shall speak of (**de**) that later.
24. These gentlemen (**messieurs**) have come every day.
25. There is a means of (**de**) knowing (inf.) it.
26. He had already come this morning.
27. You have nothing to (**à**) do.
28. One is never happier than at (**à**) your age, boy.
29. You are at the house of friends.
30. I have neither father nor mother any more.
31. You are still sick.
32. We are not the strongest.
33. They will be here this evening.
34. I know nothing about it.
35. Let's go in, we will finish that later.
36. Where are you going?
37. I know nothing about it yet.
38. I see a little ten year old boy.
39. His eyes are large and black.
40. Go tell madame that I am tired.
41. He ate little, drank still less, and did not talk at all.
42. We are all brothers.
43. I am going to tell you what I did not say just now at (**à**) table.

44. He came to see my sister.
45. You were only a child.
46. I heard what you did for (pour) this poor mother and for this poor young girl.

(You will make many mistakes in this. That is no reason for discouragement. Study your mistakes, and write it again.)

LESSON XXXVII

THE PAST DEFINITE TENSE

French contents itself with three tenses referring to past time, the imperfect, the present perfect (both of which have been explained already), and the past definite. This last-named tense is the one we are now to learn.

The past definite expresses a single act in past time, not a continuing one or a customary one or a repeated one. It emphasizes the action rather than the completion of the action. A good illustration is "He died." This tense is used in narrative such as histories.

The conjugation of the past definite — once started — proceeds with regularity, as do all French tenses except the present. Regular past definites are as follows:—

parler, to speak	**finir,** to finish	**recevoir, to** receive
je parlai, I spoke	**je finis,** I finished	**je reçus,** I received
tu parlas	**tu finis**	**tu reçus**
il parla	**il finit**	**il reçut**
nous parlâmes	**nous finîmes**	**nous reçûmes**
vous parlâtes	**vous finîtes**	**vous reçûtes**
ils parlèrent	**ils finirent**	**ils reçurent**

CONJUGATE LIKE THE ABOVE

j'allai, I went		je vendis, I sold	je connus, I knew
j'envoyai, I sent		je battis, I beat	je mourus, I died
je me hâtai, I hurried		je dormis, I slept	je courus, I ran
		je craignis, I feared	je crus, I believed
		je partis, I left	je tus, I kept still
		je séntis, I perceived	je plus, I pleased
		je servis, I served	il plut, it rained
In a class by themselves:		je sortis, I went out	je vécus, I lived
		j'ouvris, I opened	je bus, I drank
je vins, I came		je vêtis, I dressed	je fus, I was
je tins, I held		j'écrivis, I wrote	je pus, I could
		je ris, I laughed	j'eus, I had
vins	**tins**	je suivis, I followed	je dus, I had to
vins	**tins**	je dis, I said	je voulus, I wished
vint	**tint**	je fis, I made	je lus, I read
		j'assis, I seated	
vînmes	**tînmes**	je vis, I saw	
vîntes	**tîntes**	je vendis, I sold	
vinrent	**tinrent**	je mis, I put	
		j'offris, I offered	
		je pris, I took	
		je conduisis, I led	
		je rendis, I gave back	

Translate:

1. Il me fut impossible de dormir.
2. Je ne pus dormir une minute.
3. Nous arrivâmes aux premières maisons du village.

4. Nous vîmes que la femme venait de lire une lettre.
5. Nous fûmes très surpris de ne voir personne dans la salle.
6. Mon oncle rentra chez nous par les jardins.
7. Le docteur mit la main sur le cœur de la femme.
8. Il me prit le bras, ouvrit la porte, et me conduisit (*led*) dans la rue.
9. Un jour l'oncle eut une grande discussion.
10. Tous les hommes sentirent la sublime magnificence de cette minute.
11. A neuf heures du soir nous partîmes.
12. Le capitaine me reçut dans sa "cagna" (*den*).
13. Le contre - attaque ne vint pas.
14. Nous ne sûmes où nous allions que quand nous fûmes arrivés.
15. Pour la première fois je compris bien la mort.

Write in French, using the past definite:

1. Everybody went out.
2. She did not answer.
3. I opened a window.
4. We arrived there.
5. That made us laugh (**rire**).
6. I saw three of them.
7. We went up to (**dans**) our rooms.
8. I did not understand any of it.
9. They (**on**) made the soldiers come.
10. I spoke of it with respect.
11. Two men came out of the house.
12. We were soon downstairs (**en bas**).
13. I went to see.
14. He took him by the arm.
15. He put him out (**dehors**).
16. I saw that she had come.
17. He went into the kitchen.
18. We (**on**) did not enter the village.
19. We arrived there about six.
20. The poor woman wanted to go home.

(See Appendix)

LESSON XXXVIII

PRONOUNS (Review)
VOCABULARY

Relative Pronouns

qui [kee] (subject pro.) who, which, that
que [kuh](object pro.) whom, which, that
qui (after preposition) whom
quoi (after preposition) which, what
dont whose, of whom, of which

Interrogative Pronouns

qui who, whom
que what
quoi what (after prepositions)

Demonstrative Pronouns

celui this (one), that (one)
celui-ci this one here
celui-là that one there
ceci this
celà that

Most of the important pronouns you have been using for some time. It may help you to remember them if you learn a simple classification:

1. Personal pronouns: **je, nous, vous,** etc.
2. Possessive adjectives: **mon, notre, votre,** etc.
3. Relative pronouns: **qui, que, dont,** etc.
4. Interrogative pronouns: **qui, que** (**quoi**).
5. Interrogative adjective: **quel, quelle.**
6. Demonstrative adjective: **ce** (**cet**), **cette, ces.**
7. Demonstrative pronouns: **ceci, cela, celui,** etc.

The possessive adjectives and the personal pronouns you have learned and used repeatedly. A complete table of personal pronouns is given in the Appendix.

Review with the aid of this, and go over again the statement in Lesson XIV as to the position of pronouns in the French sentence.

The relative pronouns **qui** and **que** you have seen in sentences. Neither changes in form to show gender. **Qui** is used as subject of the verb, and **que** as object of the verb. After a preposition **qui** is used, not **que,** to mean *whom*, and **quoi** to mean *which, what.* The relative pronoun **dont,** which is equivalent to **de** and a relative, means *of whom, of which, whose.*

The interrogatives need no special comment. Remember the expression: **A qui est la maison?** — *Whose house is it?*

The demonstrative adjective **ce, cette, ces** is simple. The two demonstrative pronouns **ceci** and **cela,** which do not change for gender and number, are easy to understand. **Celui** is not used so often as the others you have learned. One of its important uses is as antecedent for a pronoun: **Celui que vous cherchez** — *The one that you are looking for.* Its various forms are given in the Appendix. **Celui-ci** and **celui-là** are easily understood from our ungrammatical expressions *this here* — *that there.*

It will be of help to you to turn to the Appendix, and to study with some attention the pronouns and pronominal adjectives listed there.

Translate: (Look up any words that you do not know in the vocabulary at the end of the book. This is good practice.)

1. Sur l'un de ces morts était une lettre sur l'enveloppe de laquelle était écrit: celui qui trouvera mon cadavre voudra bien envoyer cette lettre avec l'indication exacte de ma tombe à———.

2. Je rêve encore de ce dont je rêvais quand j'étais encore soldat à l'instruction, — la grande entrée à Berlin.
3. Je suis un de ceux qui lui donnent le plus de travail.
4. J'ai deux ou trois amis avec qui je puis causer intimement.
5. Il apporta un stack de lettres; j'en eus pour ma part trente-deux.
6. Tout cela met de la gaieté dans tous les cœurs.
7. J'ai vu vins, pain, viande — tout ce dont ont besoin les deux régiments.
8. La fatigue était telle qu'on finissait par ne plus rien voir ni sentir.
9. La route était couverte d'une boue affreuse, dans laquelle on avait peine à avancer.
10. Je criai à la sentinelle de le laisser venir et je lui criai à lui-même d'avancer.

EXERCISE

(Numbers refer to the sentences above)

(1) **ces**: kind of pronoun, gender, number, modifies what?
laquelle: kind, gender, number, agrees with what in gender and number, use in sentence?
celui: kind, gender, number, use in sentence?
qui: kind? Does it change for gender or number? What is its antecedent? Use in clause?
cette: kind, gender, number, agrees with what?
ma: kind, gender, number, agrees with what?
(2) **dont**: kind, meaning?
(3) **ceux**: kind, gender, number?
qui: kind, antecedent, use in clause?
lui: kind, number, use in clause?
(4) **qui**: kind, use in clause?

(5) **en**: why is en used here?
(6) **cela**: kind? Does it change in form?
(7) **dont**: kind? modifies what word?

(See Appendix)

"POILU"

Les hommes comprennent que leur fusil est leur meilleur ami, et ils en prennent grand soin; de plus, contrairement à ce qu'écrivent certains journaux sur le "poilu", le soldat n'aime pas être sale. Il en souffre au contraire. Ce qui en est cause, c'est la fausse étymologie qu'on donne au mot "poilu". Il ne vient pas de ce que le soldat est hirsute et mal rasé, non; le mot est vieux. Sous le Premier Empire c'étaient les grognards de la garde avec le bonnet à poil; ces soldats étant (*being*) les meilleurs de Napoléon, on appela "brave à trois poils" quelqu'un dont la bravoure était digne d'un grenadier. Aujourd'hui on dit "poilu"—c'est-à-dire seulement: "bon soldat".

LESSON XXXIX

REFLEXIVE VERBS

You will find many reflexive verbs in French. They are not hard — except the name.

We have one real reflexive verb in English — *to behave*. It is conjugated thus in the present indicative:—

behave myself	We behave ourselves
You behave yourself	You behave yourselves
He behaves himself	They behave themselves

Also, many English verbs can be used reflexively:—

He hurt himself.
I can see myself.
Cure yourself.
Know yourself.

Any verb is reflexive whose subject and object are the same person or thing. Any verb showing this harmony in pronouns or in noun and pronoun is reflexive. Sometimes verbs that are reflexive in French are not reflexive in English. For example — **il s'amuse** *means he is amusing himself* or *he is having a good time*: **il s'arrête** means *he stops himself*, better — *he stops*. Sometimes the French prefers the reflexive form where English uses the passive. For example — **il se nomme Robert,** *he is called Robert.*

Conjugation of **se flatter, to flatter oneself.**

PRESENT

je me flatte	I flatter myself
tu te flattes	you flatter yourself
il se flatte	he flatters himself
nous nous flattons	we flatter ourselves
vous vous flattez	you flatter yourselves
ils se flattent	they flatter themselves

IMPERFECT

je me flattais	I was flattering myself, etc.

PRESENT PERFECT

je me suis flatté(e)	I have flattered myself, etc.

PAST PERFECT

je m'étais flatté(e)	I had flattered myself, etc.

FUTURE

je me flatterai	I shall flatter myself, etc.

PAST DEFINITE

je me flattai	I flattered myself, etc.

CONJUGATION OF THE PRESENT PERFECT

Notice that if the subject is masculine, the participle is **flatté**; if the subject is feminine, the participle is **flattée**. In the plural add **-s**.

PRESENT PERFECT OF **se flatter**

For meaning see above.

je me suis flatté *or* **flattée**
tu t'es " "
il s'est " "
or **elle s'est** "

nous nous sommes flattés *or* **flattées**
vous vous êtes " "
ils se sont " "
or **elles se sont** "

PAST PERFECT

je m'étais flatté *or* **flattée**
tu t'étais " "
il s'était " "
or **elle s'était** "

nous nous étions flattés *or* **flattées**
vous vous étiez " "
ils se sont " "
or **elles se sont** "

IMPERATIVE

flatte-toi, flatter yourself
flattons-nous, let us flatter ourselves
flattez-vous, flatter yourself, *or* yourselves

INFINITIVE

Note these examples.

j'ai tort de me flatter, I do wrong in flattering myself.
il a " " **se** " , he does wrong in flattering himself.
vous avez " " **vous** " , you do wrong in flattering yourself *or* yourselves.

ils ont tort de se flatter, they do wrong in flattering themselves.

VOCABULARY

***lever**	to raise	**se lever**	to get up, rise
coucher	to lay down	**se coucher**	to go to bed, retire
***promener**	to lead out	**se promener**	to take a walk
arrêter	to stop	**s'arrêter**	to come to a halt
porter	to carry	**se porter**	to be (well or sick)
amuser	to amuse	**s'amuser**	to have a good time
exprimer	to express	**s'exprimer**	to express oneself
fâcher	to vex	**se fâcher**	to be vexed
***avancer**	to push forward	**s'avancer**	to advance
ouvrir	to open	**s'ouvrir**	to be opened, open
†habiller	to dress	**s'habiller**	to dress (oneself)
rappeler	to recall	**se rappeler de**	to remember
dépêcher	to dispatch	**se dépêcher**	to hurry
réunir	to join again	**se réunir**	to meet, gather
***appeler**	to give a name	**s'appeler**	to be called
vendre	to sell	**se vendre**	to be sold, sell
s'écrier	to exclaim	**se mettre (à)**	to begin
s'en aller	to go away		

IRREGULAR CONJUGATION

*Notice: (In the present tense)

lève lèves lève levons lèvent

promène promènes promène promenons promenez promènent

appelle appelles appelle appelons appelez appellent

avançons

EXERCISE

1. Les enfants ne s'amuseront pas beaucoup.
2. Comment votre petit frère s'appelle-t-il?
3. Nous nous réunissons et nous nous amusons.
4. On s'arrête et on s'amuse.
5. Comment vous portez-vous?
6. Je me porte très bien.
7. A quelle heure vous levez-vous?
8. A la campagne nous nous levons à cinq heures.
9. Vous vous exprimez bien en français.
10. Ne vous fâchez pas — nous nous arrêtons.
11. Vous coucheriez-vous à neuf heures à la campagne?
12. Nous nous amusons toujours quand vous êtes chez nous.
13. Ils se lèvent à sept heures.
14. Elles se promènent du matin au soir.
15. Elles se sont promenées.
16. Je me levai doucement et j'ouvris une fenêtre.
17. Il se leva, s'avança jusqu'à une des fenêtres et se mit à regarder le village.
18. Allons nous coucher; demain, quand vous vous lèverez, il y aura du pain.
19. Il se leva brusquement et sortit. Je le suivis.

EXERCISE

Write in French:

1. I get up.
2. You go to bed.
3. He stops.
4. We feel fine.
5. You have a good time.
6. They hurry.
7. I advance.
8. You cry out.
9. The door opens.
10. We express ourselves.
11. You are taking a walk.
12. They gather.

LESSON XL

DISJUNCTIVE FORMS of PERSONAL PRONOUNS

The so-called disjunctive pronouns are used:

1. As objects of prepositions.
2. After **être,** when the subject of **être** is **ce: C'est moi.**
3. In the French idiom, where the pronoun is used without grammatical connection with the rest of the sentence, for the purpose of emphasis: **Moi, je vous aime** — *For my part, I like you.*

The disjunctive forms are:

Singular		*Plural*	
moi	I, me	**nous**	we, us
toi	you	**vous**	you
lui	he, him	**eux**	they, them (masc.)
elle	she, her	**elles**	they, them (fem.)
soi	himself etc.	**soi**	themselves
		quoi	what, which

The French, by adding **-même** to the disjunctive form of the pronoun, make the pronoun emphatic. This **-même** may be translated by *-self*: **moi-même** — *myself*. Add **mêmes** to the plurals.

VOCABULARY

acheter	buy	**suivre**	follow
tirer	shoot	**craindre**	fear
†**fusiller**	shoot	**fameux, fameuse**	famous
songer (**à**)	think of, consider	**sans** (prep.)	without
		malgré (prep.)	in spite of

craindre—to fear **suivre**—to follow

Pres.	je crains	nous craignons	je suis	nous suivons
	tu crains	vous craignez	tu suis	vous suivez
	il craint	ils craignent	il suit	ils suivent
Imperf.	je craignais		je suivais	
Future	je craindrai		je suivrai	
Cond.	je craindrais		je suivrais	
Past def.	je craignis		je suivis	
Past part.	craint		suivi	
Pres. Part.	craignant		suivant	

Translate:

1. Moi, je vais dormir.
2. Demain? De quoi demain?
3. Moi, je suis content.
4. Pour moi j'explorai un peu le village.
5. Ici on parle français.
6. Cela va sans dire.
7. Après moi le déluge.
8. Moi, je ne dis rien.
9. L'état, c'est moi.
10. Il rit bien qui rit le dernier.
11. Voici en quoi consistait cette attaque.
12. On les suivit presque chez eux.
13. Après quoi on se mit en marche.
14. Personne ne songea à tirer sur eux.
15. Malgré soi on se faisait petit.
16. L'un d'eux me passa le "Matin", que je lus avec plaisir.
17. Dis donc, toi, est-ce que tu veux être fusillé?
18. L'oncle et moi nous regardions à la fenêtre.
19. J'ai vu la femme dont il parlait si souvent.
20. Eh bien, toi, conduis-moi dans votre maison—vite!
21. Le soldat et moi nous étions derrière lui.
22. En un jour comme celui-ci nous sommes très heureux.

23. J'ai acheté du vin pour eux.
24. Cette femme, dont vous parlez sans la connaître, est une brave femme.
25. Je connaissais assez le caractère espagnol pour être très sûr de n'avoir rien à craindre d'un homme qui avait mangé et fumé avec moi.
26. Il y avait alors un fameux bandit dont les exploits étaient dans toutes les bouches.

LESSON XLI

PRESENT PARTICIPLES

In French the present participle, with and without the preposition **en,** is used freely. (There is no difference in translation when **en** is used and when it is not.) The present participle does not change for gender and number.

PRESENT PARTICIPLES

parl-er	**parlant**	—speaking
part-ir	**partant**	—leaving
mett-re	**mettant**	—putting
recev-oir	**recevant**	—receiving

These participles, you notice, are all formed the same: cut off the ending from the infinitive and add **-ant.**

Learn the following list of participles irregularly formed:

avoir	**—ayant**	écrire	**—écrivant**
être	**—étant**	faire	**—faisant**
boire	**—buvant**	lire	**—lisant**
connaître	**—connaissant**	prendre	**—prenant**
croire	**—croyant**	rire	**—riant**

conduire	—**conduisant**	savoir	—**sachant**
dire	—**disant**	voir	—**voyant**

VOCABULARY

la **journée**	day	**servir** (like **partir**)	serve (as)
la **nouvelle**	news	**vivre**	live
les **nouvelles**	news	**communiquer**	communicate
la **sorte**	kind, sort	**rire**	laugh
de la sorte	thus, in this way	**sourire** (like **rire**)	smile
		croire	think
		conduire	lead, conduct

	vivre — to live		**rire** — to laugh	
Pres.	je vis	nous vivons	je ris	nous rions
	tu vis	vous vivez	tu ris	vous riez
	il vit	ils vivent	il rit	ils rient
Imperf.	je vivais		je riais	
Future	je vivrai		je rirai	
Cond.	je vivrais		je rirais	
Past def.	je vécus		je ris	
Past part.	vécu		ri	
Pres. part.	vivant		riant	

	croire — to think		**conduire** — to lead	
Pres.	je crois	nous croyons	je conduis	nous conduisons
	tu crois	vous croyez	tu conduis	vous conduisez
	il croit	ils croient	il conduit	ils conduisent
Imperf.	je croyais		je conduisais	
Future	je croirai		je conduirai	
Cond.	je croirais		je conduirais	
Past def.	je crus		je conduisis	
Past part.	cru		conduit	
Pres. part.	croyant		conduisant	

Translate:

1. N'ayant rien à faire, j'allai au cinéma.

2. Rentrant, nous eûmes la récompense du souper.
3. Il vivait seul dans la dernière maison du village, une petite maison n'ayant qu'une seule pièce en bas.
4. Comme mon cœur galopait en les voyant.
5. En passant devant la maison, il cria: "Bonne nouvelle!"
6. Ayant parlé de la sorte, elle sortit.
7. Et moi, ne sachant que répondre, je ne dis rien.
8. Puis, voyant mon frère, il le regarda gravement.
9. "C'est Madame votre mère!" dit-il, en se levant.
10. En ouvrant la porte de notre chambre, nous vîmes que la femme n'était plus là.
11. La femme, en disant cela, était triste.
12. Jamais ma mère en parlant de ces choses ne dit rien contre mon père.
13. Tous les gens l'écoutaient en souriant.
14. La même pièce servait de salon et de salle à manger, communiquant directement avec la cuisine par une porte toujours grande ouverte.
15. Nous passâmes ensemble toute la journée, mangeant, buvant, et le reste.
16. La dame, en passant, me regarda avec ses beaux yeux noirs.

LESSON XLII

THE IMPERSONAL falloir. THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present	**il faut**	it is necessary; **il faut manger,** one must eat.
Past and past def.	**il fallait** / **il fallut**	it was necessary
Future	**il faudra**	it will be necessary

Present perf. **il a fallu** it has been necessary *or* was necessary.
Conditional **il faudrait** it would be necessary
Subjunctive
Present **qu'il faille** can you get the translation from
Past **qu'il fallût** the context?

EXERCISE

1. Il faut voir. 2. Il faut tout faire. 3. Il faut écrire. 4. Il faut mourir. 5. Il fallait aller. 6. Il faudrait avoir de l'argent. 7. Il faudra venir. 8. Il faut savoir. 9. Il faudra pouvoir tout faire. 10. Il faut faire ce que voulait ton père. 11. C'est à ton père qu'il faut penser. 12. Il ne nous faut (*we need*) que quinze minutes pour arriver à la gare. 13. En voyage il faut tout voir. 14. Que faut-il faire?

SUBJUNCTIVE

You will find here an abundance of subjunctives from regular and irregular verbs. Draw your own conclusions about the formations. No meanings are given — this is an exercise in forms.

PRESENT

donner	**finir**	**vendre**	**avoir**	**être**
que je donne	finisse	vende	aie	sois
que tu donnes	finisses	vendes	aies	sois
qu'il donne	finisse	vende	aie	soit
que nous donnions	finissions	vendions	ayons	soyons
que vous donniez	finissiez	vendiez	ayez	soyez
qu'ils donnent	finissent	vendent	aient	soient

venir	**aller**	**faire**	**savoir**	**pouvoir**
vienne	†aille	fasse	sache	peuve
viennes	†ailles	fasses	saches	peuves
vienne	†aille	fasse	sache	peuve

venions	allions	fassions	sachions	pouvions
veniez	alliez	fassiez	sachiez	pouviez
viennent	†aillent	fassent	sachent	peuvent

vouloir	voir	dormir	mettre	mourir
†veuille	voie	dorme	mette	meure
†veuilles	voies	dormes	mettes	meures
†veuille	voie	dorme	mette	meure
voulions	voyions	dormions	mettions	mourions
vouliez	voyiez	dormiez	mettiez	mouriez
veuillent	voient	dorment	mettent	meurent

1. In each verb what resemblance is there between the first and third singular? 2. Between the third plural, subjunctive and indicative? 3. In the first and second plural what indicative endings are used? 4. In these last two questions, do you find any exceptions? 5. What difference between the first and second singular?

Be sure that you can recognize subjunctive forms when you see them. Otherwise they may puzzle you when you read French. It is not a matter of great importance to memorize more than their endings.

PAST

que je donnasse	finisse	vendisse	eusse
que tu donnasses	finisses	vendisses	eusses
qu'il donnât	finît	vendît	eût
que nous donnassions	finissions	vendissions	eussions
que vous donnassiez	finissiez	vendissiez	eussiez
qu'ils donnassent	finissent	vendissent	eussent

fusse	vinsse	fisse	susse	pusse
fusses	vinsses	fisses	susses	pusses
fût	vînt	fît	sût	pût

fussions	vinssions	fissions	sussions	pussions
fussiez	vinssiez	fissiez	sussiez	pussiez
fussent	vinssent	fissent	sussent	pussent

voulusse	visse	dormisse	misse
voulusses	visses	dormisses	misses
voulût	vît	dormît	mît
voulussions	vissions	dormissions	missions
voulussiez	vissiez	dormissiez	missiez
voulussent	vissent	dormissent	missent

Il faut que

Il faut has another use — with the conjunction **que** meaning *that.*

Il faut que j'aille, it is necessary that I should go, *or* I must go, *or* I've got to go.

EXERCISE

1. Il faut qu'il vienne. 2. Il faut que nous sachions. 3. Il faut que vous voyiez. 4. Il faut qu'ils meurent. 5. Il faut que vous fassiez quelque chose. 6. Il faut qu'un de nous aille à Paris. 7. Il faut que j'y aille. 8. Il faudrait partir. 9. Il faut la guerre. 10. Il faut que je vous fasse encore une demande. 11. Quand les gens ne veulent pas entendre de bonnes raisons, il faut leur en donner de meilleures. 12. Il le faut, il le faut! 13. Il faut que les enfants soient possédés du diable. 14. Il ne faut pas que nos propres (*own*) misères (*misfortunes*) nous fassent oublier (*forget*) que d'autres sont encore plus malheureux que nous.

LESSON XLIII

THE IMPERATIVE. THE SUBJUNCTIVE (Continued)

The Imperative has three forms, only two of which you will have occasion to use in making French sentences.

The first form you will need to know only to read French stories. This form, from our point of view, is a harmless provincialism. You need the other two forms.

Note this model:—

IMPERATIVE OF A REGULAR VERB
THERE IS ONLY ONE TENSE, THE PRESENT

Second person singular **parle,** speak!
First person plural **parlons,** let us speak!
Second person plural **parlez,** speak!

IRREGULAR IMPERATIVES

Sing.	sois	aie	viens	va	fais
1 pl.	soyons	ayons	venons	allons	faisons
2 pl.	soyez	ayez	venez	allez	faites
	vois	veux	sache	dors	
	voyons	voulons	sachons	dormons	
	voyez	†veuillez	sachez	dormez	

USES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE
EVERY STUDENT SHOULD MEMORIZE THIS

In the last lesson you learned that the subjunctive is used with **il faut que.** We also find it in expressions of wish, command, forbidding, request, consent, judgment, joy, anger, sorrow, etc. Also in clauses introduced by **qui, où,** etc.; and in clauses preceded by **seul, dernier, premier,** etc.

It is in many clauses beginning with **avant que, jusqu'à ce que, sans que, afin que, en cas que, quoique, bien que,** etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE AS IMPERATIVE

Vive la République, (long) live the Republic! This is really an imperative of the third person.
Plût à Dieu, would (to) God!
Qu'il parte, let him go! Have him depart!

EXERCISE

1. C'est préférable que nous nous aidions les uns les autres. 2. Désirez-vous qu'il vende sa maison? 3. Nous espérons qu'il la vende. 4. Il est certain qu'il la vende. 5. Il est possible que nous passions la journée chez vous. 6. Pensez-vous qu'il nous reçoive? 7. Il n'aimait pas que l'on flattât son fils. 8. 'Honi soit qui mal y pense! 9. Dieu soit béni! 10. Que (*whether*) cette femme soit Française ou Allemande (*German*), qu'elle ait des idées républicaines ou non, cela ne m'inquiète (*disturb*) pas. 11. Le plus grand crime de ceux qui gouvernent dans ce monde, c'est de refuser l'instruction aux misérables afin que leurs races nobles soient toujours au-dessus (*on top*). 12. Ah! c'est grand; c'est beau! Quoique je sois partisan de la paix (*peace*), ça m'a touché. 13. Qu'ils soient Républicains ou non, qu'importe! 14. Quoique je reçoive une pension du roi de Prusse, je suis forcé de dire que les Républicains ont raison. 15. Qu'elle soit bénie! (*Bless her!*)

LESSON XLIV

IMPERSONAL VERBS

Impersonal verbs are those appearing only in the third person singular, such as *it rains*, *it is necessary*, *it pains me*.

CONJUGATION OF **tonner**, AND **y avoir**

tonner — to thunder

Indicative

Present	**il tonne**	it thunders
Imperfect	**il tonnait**	it thundered
Future	**il tonnera**	it will thunder

Pres. perf.	**il a tonné**	it has thundered
Past perf.	**il avait tonné**	it had thundered
Past def.	**il tonna**	it thundered
Conditional	**il tonnerait**	it would thunder

y avoir — to be

Indicative		
Present	**il y a**	there is
Imperfect	**il y avait**	there was
Future	**il y aura**	there will be
Pres. perf.	**il y a eu**	there was
Past perf.	**il y avait eu**	there had been
Past def.	**il y eut**	there was
Conditional	**il y aurait**	there would be

VOCABULARY

geler	to freeze	**il fait froid**	it is cold
neiger	to snow	**il fait chaud**	it is hot
pleuvoir	to rain	**s'agir de**	to be a question of
grêler	to hail	**valoir**	to be worth, be
éclairer	to lighten	**valoir mieux**	to be better
dégeler	to thaw	**importer**	to make a difference, matter
s'en falloir	to lack		
rester	to remain	**le temps**	weather
le vent	wind	**arriver**	to happen

WEATHER

Quel temps fait-il?	What sort of weather is it?
Il fait beau temps. Il fait beau.	The weather is beautiful.
Il pleut. Il fait de la pluie	It is raining.
Il faisait bien froid.	It was very cold.
Il a fait du vent.	It has been windy.
Est-ce qu'il fera obscur?	Will it be cloudy (*or* dark)?
Il fait chaud.	It is hot.

Translate:

1. Il faut aller. Il faut que j'aille.
2. Il vaudra mieux ne rien dire.
3. Mieux vaut tard que jamais.
4. Il importe. Il n'importe. N'importe.
5. Il s'en faut de beaucoup.
6. Il arrive quelquefois dans les meilleures familles.
7. Il n'arrivera jamais.
8. Il reste à savoir. (colloquial) Reste à savoir.
9. Il lui fallait la présence de son ami.
10. Il faisait encore nuit.
11. Nous entrons, nous demandons du vin, de l'eau-de-vie (*brandy*), n'importe quoi.
12. Il vous faut maintenant du calme, madame.
13. Il faut tâcher (*try*) de dormir.
14. Il me fallut donc glisser (*slide*) seul, et, comme il faisait froid, au bout d'une demi-heure j'en eus bien assez.
15. Cela m'est arrivé déjà bien souvent.
16. Qu'il fait froid dehors (*outside*)!
17. C'est de la vie active qu'il me faut.
18. La France vaut bien la peine que l'on meure pour elle.
19. Pas une minute où il ne passe quelque chose.
20. Il faudra que je parte.
21. Il faut que je fasse encore une demande.
22. Il fait tard — il faudra partir avant le jour.

LESSON XLV

READING LESSON

LA GUERRE

1. (Look up words you do not know in vocabulary at end of book.)

15 mars. Nous sommes rentrés hier au cantonnement. Pendant ces cinq jours, les plus terribles que j'ai passés, je n'ai pas eu une minute de tranquillité physique ou morale pour écrire une seule ligne de mon journal. J'ai eu, je crois, toute la lyre des émotions que peut fournir la guerre: bombardement, attaque, contre-attaque — situation toujours critique, longs et pénibles mouvements dans les boyaux, et par-dessus tout, l'ennemi terrible, bien plus terrible que les Boches, — la boue. Car les Boches ont leurs instants de répit, la boue est là, perpétuelle, implacable.

2. Au bout de trois heures de marche on arriva au village de Perthes — lamentable fantôme de village — une église debout encore je ne sais par quel miracle. A ce moment il fallut s'arrêter dans le boyau, les Boches envoyaient des shrapnels. La fatigue était telle que quelques minutes je dormis, debout, appuyé sur mon bâton. La sensation que l'on marchait me réveilla. Il pleuvait. Oh, quand arriverons-nous enfin!

3. Il y avait plus de six heures que nous marchions. A la fin on s'arrêta. J'allai avec le guide inspecter mon nouveau domaine. L'abominable chose que cette tranchée, un charnier — des morts, des morts partout. Ah, ils ne s'étaient pas amusés, nos prédécesseurs. Ils avaient eu près de vingt tués ou blessés. Ce n'était pas encourageant que de voir tous ces morts.

4. Le ravitaillement se fit très mal. Les cuisiniers avaient à faire dans les boyaux le long et dur trajet qui nous avait coûté tant d'efforts. Ainsi ils ne nous apportèrent que du café froid, de la viande toute couverte de terre et des légumes qu'il fallut jeter. Seul le vin arriva intact, pour notre plus grande joie.

(After a successful repulse of a German attack.)

5. La situation malgré tout était peu drôle: les cadavres boches étaient très nombreux — nos grenades avaient bien travaillé — mais ils furent de suite noyés dans la boue; quand on marchait, on les enterrait davantage, et littéralement le sol de la tranchée était couvert de morts. Cela nous formait tapis et la marche dans la boue était moins pénible. Nous étions tous radieux, sous la boue qui nous couvrait. Le commandant se déclara très satisfait. —

LESSON XLVI

TRAVEL

VOCABULARY

la **gare**	station
le **chemin de fer**	railroad
le **train**	train
la **voiture**	coach, car
le **voyage**	trip
le **voyageur**	passenger, traveler
la **malle**	trunk
le **colis**	hand-baggage (one piece)
le **bagage**	baggage
faire enregistrer les bagages	to check the baggage
†le **billet**	ticket
le **guichet**	ticket-window
le **facteur**	porter, "red cap"
la **salle d'attente**	waiting-room

Write in French, and correct by Appendix:

1. I am going to take a trip.
2. I am going to the station.
3. Have you much baggage?
4. No, I have not much.

5. Have you a trunk?
6. Yes, I have two.
7. They must be checked.
8. Do you want to check your hand-baggage (plur.)?
9. No, I shall carry it in (à) my hand.
10. Have you your ticket?
11. No, I haven't it yet.
12. Buy (**prendre**) the ticket of (à) the man who is there at the ticket-window.
13. Let's go to the car.
14. You are going to get on (**monter**) the train (say *car*) with me, are you not?

The following selection is from a little comedy of Labiche and Martin, called **"Le Voyage de Monsieur Perrichon."**

LE VOYAGE DE MONSIEUR PERRICHON
ACTE PREMIER

La gare du chemin de fer de Lyon à Paris. — Au fond, rrière ouvrant sur les salles d'attente. Au fond, à roite, guichet, pour les billets. Au fond, à gauche, bancs. A droite, marchande de gâteaux; à gauche, marchande de livres.

SCENE II

Un employé du chemin de fer, Perrichon, Madame Perrichon, Henriette.

(Ils entrent par la droite)

PERRICHON. Par ici!....ne nous quittons pas! nous ne pourrions plus nous retrouver....Où sont nos bagages?.... (Regardant à droite.) Ah! très bien! Qui est-ce qui a les parapluies?....

HENRIETTE. Moi, papa.

PERRICHON. Et le sac de nuit?....les manteaux?..

MADAME PERRICHON. Les voici.

PERRICHON. Et mon panama?....Il est resté dans le fiacre! (Faisant une mouvement pour sortir et s'arrêtant.) Ah! non! je l'ai à la main!....Dieu, que j'ai chaud!

MADAME PERRICHON. C'est ta faute!....tu nous presses, tu nous bouscules!....je n'aime pas à voyager comme ça!

PERRICHON. C'est le départ qui est laborieux.... une fois que nous serons casés!.... Restez là, je vais prendre les billets.... (Donnant son chapeau à Henriette.) Tiens, garde-moi mon panama....(Au guichet) Trois premières pour Lyon!....

L'EMPLOYÉ (brusquement). Ce n'est pas ouvert! Dans un quart d'heure!

PERRICHON (à l'employé) Ah! pardon! c'est la première fois que je voyage.... (Revenant à sa femme.) Nous sommes en avance.

MADAME PERRICHON. Là! quand je te disais que nous avions le temps.... Tu ne nous as pas laissées déjeuner!

PERRICHON. Il vaut mieux être en avance!....on examine la gare! (A Henriette.) Eh bien, petite fille, es-tu contente?....Nous voilà partis!....encore quelques minutes, et, rapides comme la flèche de Guillaume Tell, nous nous élancerons vers les Alpes! (A sa femme.) Tu as pris la lorgnette?

MADAME PERRICHON. Mais oui!

HENRIETTE, (à son père). Sans reproches, voilà au moins deux ans que tu nous promets ce voyage.

PERRICHON. Ma fille, il fallait que j'eusse vendu mon fonds.... Un commerçant ne se retire pas aussi facilement des affaires qu'une petite fille de son pensionnat.... D'ailleurs, j'attendais que ton éducation fût terminée pour la compléter en faisant rayonner devant toi le grand spectacle de la nature!

MADAME PERRICHON. Ah çà! est-ce que vous allez continuer comme ça?.... Vous faites des phrases dans une gare!

PERRICHON. Je ne fais pas de phrases....j'élève les idées de l'enfant. (Tirant de sa poche un petit carnet.) Tiens, ma fille, voici un carnet que j'ai acheté pour toi, pour écrire d'un côté la dépense, et de l'autre nos impressions de voyage! Tu écriras, et moi, je dicterai.

MADAME PERRICHON. Comment! vous allez vous faire auteur à présent?

PERRICHON. Il ne s'agit pas de me faire auteur.... mais il me semble qu'un homme du monde peut avoir des pensées et les recueillir sur un carnet!

MADAME PERRICHON. Ce sera bien joli!

PERRICHON (à part). Elle est comme ça, chaque fois qu'elle n'a pas pris son café!

UN FACTEUR (poussant un petit chariot chargé de bagages). Monsieur, voici vos bagages. Voulez-vous les faire enregistrer?.....

PERRICHON. Certainement! Mais, auparavant, je vais les compter....parce que, quand on sait son compte.... Un, deux, trois, quatre, cinq, six, ma femme, sept, ma fille huit. et moi, neuf. Nous sommes neuf.

LE FACTEUR. Enlevez:

PERRICHON (courant vers le fond). Dépêchons-nous!

LE FACTEUR. Pas par là, c'est par ici! (Il indique la gauche.)

PERRICHON. Ah! très bien! (Aux femmes.) Attendez-moi là!....ne nous perdons pas! (Il sort en courant, suivant le facteur.)

LESSON XLVII

SYNOPSIS OF VERBS

The French has certain compound forms of the verb that are really passive forms. These are so much like the English that it has not been considered necessary to give any special drill on them. A set of these forms has been given below, and you should read them over, just to see how easy they are.

The past participle in the passive, as is always the case when the auxiliary is **être,** not **avoir,** changes in ending to agree with the subject of the verb. **Je** (masc.) **suis flatté, nous** (masc.) **sommes flattés, je** (fem.) **suis flattée, nous** (fem.) **sommes flattées.**

Indicative		
Present	**je suis flatté**	I am flattered
Imperfect	**j'étais flatté**	I was flattered
Future	**je serai flatté**	I shall be flattered
Pres. perf.	**j'ai été flatté**	I have been flattered
Past perf.	**j'avais été flatté**	I had been flattered
Past def.	**je fus flatté**	I was flattered
Conditional		
Present	**je serais flatté**	I would be flattered
Past	**j'aurais été flatté**	I would have been
Subjunctive		etc.
Present	**que je sois flatté**	
Imperfect	**que je fusse flatté**	

Pres. perf. **que j'aie été flatté**
Past perf. **que j'eusse été flatté**

(The set of forms, as given above, is called a synopsis of a verb. Giving a synopsis of a verb, now in one person, now in another, is a good means of drill, and one you can practice alone, correcting yourself afterward by carefully looking up the forms where they have been given in the text.)

1. Give a synopsis of **aller** in the first person singular, active voice.
2. Give a synopsis of **voir** in the third sing., active.
3. Give a synopsis of **avoir** in the first plural, active.
4. Give a synopsis of **être** in the second person plural (active).
5. Give a synopsis of **venir** in third plural (active).

(Correct by Appendix)

You notice no synopsis has been called for in the passive voice. The passive voice is relatively unimportant.

Considerable time has been given to French verbs in this book, because they are very important, and they are considered difficult. They are difficult, and they are not. A stammering high school boy, when asked to recite on verbs, used to say: "W-wa-wait a minute!.... J-Ju-just start me off!" So in French verbs, if we just start you off, the rest is not difficult: it is merely a matter of learning several sets of endings.

You have been given many of the most important irregular verbs. Unfortunately that does not mean that you know them. There is so much to remember, and it is so easy to forget. — A carefully prepared table of irregular verbs will be found in the Appendix. This should "start you off". Study it, until you know just

where to find the forms that you need, then refer to it patiently until you really know your verbs. This may not be until the end of your second year of study.

Because you need drill on this, ten verb lists follow. Write these, using your table of parts in the Appendix, then compare what you have written with the correct lists given in the Appendix. Then study your correct list, and try writing it again. Do not try to write more than one list in an evening, and keep at each one until you really know the forms. Never forget that languages must have time to soak in.

A complete conjugation of several verbs is also given at the end of the book. Look these over at your leisure.

FIRST VERB LIST

1. to have
2. she has not
3. he has had
4. they (*m.*) are
5. we had been
6. that he may have
7. he will be
8. people are
9. having
10. to be
11. we shall be
12. we have
13. we had (imp.)
14. to have been
15. I would be
16. having had
17. they would be
18. we were (past def.)
19. I should have
20. they had been
21. people had (imp.)
22. you were (past def.)
23. I had (imp.)
24. I had (pres. perf.)
25. I had (past. def.)
26. people have
27. being
28. you are
29. I shall have
30. that one may be
31. people will be
32. he will have
33. having been
34. let us be
35. to have had
36. that they may be
37. have!
38. he was (imp.)

39. he was (pres. perf.)
40. he was (past def.)
41. we are
42. let us have
43. I shall be
44. they (*f.*) have had
45. that I might be

LESSON XLVIII

EXERCISE IN VOCABULARY

battre	to beat	**mouvoir**	to move
se battre	to fight	**offrir**	to offer
courir	to run	**paraître**	to appear, seem
couvrir	to cover	**plaire**	to please
devoir	to owe, ought, must	**reconnaître**	to recognize
		rompre	to break
envoyer	to send	**souffrir**	to suffer

These verbs are all irregular. Learn their various forms by consulting the table of irregular verbs at end of book.

Translate:

1. J'enverrai votre malle avec le train suivant. Vous le trouverez à la gare demain à six heures du matin.
2. Combien de temps faut-il pour envoyer ma malle à Calais?
3. Ces chambres ne me plaisent pas.
4. Envoyez à la gare chercher mes bagages.
5. Que dois-je faire pour voir votre mère?
6. La chambre me paraît un peu chaude. Peut-on ouvrir la fenêtre?
7. Vous ne mangez pas. Que puis-je vous offrir? Vous offrirai-je de la salade? Puis-je vous offrir du fromage?

8. Je veux envoyer une dépêche (*telegram*) à ma mère. Je ne sais pas comment je dois l'écrire.
9. Faut-il mettre d'abord (*first*) le nom de celui qui envoie ou de celui qui reçoit?
10. Si tout va bien, vous recevrez la réponse ce soir.
11. Cette route, me conduira-t-elle au château?
12. Conduisez-moi rue Wilson.
13. Combien vous dois-je? Voici l'argent.
14. Vous devez connaître le pays.
15. Est-ce ainsi qu'un homme doit parler?
16. Est-ce qu'on devrait souffrir cela dans le pays?
17. Vous devez être gelé (*frozen*).
18. On doit attaquer cette nuit.
19. Je courus là avec ma sœur. Moi, je ne cherchai que mes frères. Il me fallut quelque temps pour les découvrir.
20. Mon frère paraissait beaucoup plus grand, mais je le reconnus tout de même. Tous les soldats, oui, presque tous je les reconnaissais.
21. Moi, je suis tout à la joie d'aller me battre.
22. Bonnes nouvelles, on se bat ferme!

SECOND VERB LIST

1. beating
2. fighting
3. they beat
4. they fight
5. beaten
6. we beat (past def.)
7. he will run
8. she has covered
9. he ought (pres.)
10. he ought (imperf.)
11. he ought (pres. perf.)
12. he ought (past def.)
13. they were running
14. I shall send
15. he covered (past def.)
16. he covers
17. he sent (past def.)
18. he runs
19. they had moved
20. offering
21. having run
22. appearing

23. we moved (past def.)
24. appeared
25. I ran (past def.)
26. they will appear
27. he will offer
28. pleasing
29. they were moving
30. they would move
31. they will move
32. break
33. we have appeared
34. we sent (past def.)
35. he breaks
36. they appeared (past def.)
37. pleased
38. he pleased (past def.)
39. having offered
40. he will suffer
41. they suffer
42. I offered (past def.)
43. she has suffered
44. they have recognized
45. he recognized (past def.)

LESSON XLIX

REVIEW OF PARTICIPLES

Try to see how many of the short English sentences you can write. You will make many mistakes, but every one you get right is so much gain. Compare them with correct forms in Appendix. (Of course, in many cases, the sentence might be given in quite another way than in the Appendix, and be absolutely correct, but at your stage of advancement, you must accept meekly the *one* way and learn that. You will be safe in this.)

1. Let's go to bed.
2. We went up to our rooms (past def.)
3. I went to bed. (past def.)
4. I got up.
5. I opened a window.
6. While (en) dressing, I was cold (imperf.)

7. I dressed very quickly (past def.)
8. What is it?
9. They are right.
10. He got up.
11. We have all slept.
12. You have been sick.
13. All is going well.
14. Everything will go better.
15. Listen carefully.

THIRD VERB LIST

PARTICIPLES

(Study your table of irregular verbs with special reference to the participles, and then write this list from memory.)

1. going
2. having gone
3. having had
4. fighting
5. having fought
6. drinking
7. having drunk
8. understanding
9. he has understood
10. leading.
11. they have led
12. knowing
13. knowing
14. having known
15. having known
16. we have constructed
17. he has lived
18. covered
19. fearing
20. feared
21. believing
22. he has believed
23. owing
24. he has owed
25. saying
26. you had said
27. seeing
28. writing
29. making
30. they have read
31. having put
32. dying
33. dead
34. he has appeared
35. he has been able
36. he has taken.

LESSON L

REVIEW OF PAST DEFINITES

Write in French, and correct by Appendix:

1. I know him well.
2. What is this man's name?
3. I beg of you, say no more of all that.
4. I will say no more about it.
5. Fear nothing. You are with friends.
6. As for me, I went out to the kitchen to eat breakfast.
7. What are you thinking about anyway?
8. Do give us the pleasure of (**de**) coming to take coffee with us.

FOURTH VERB LIST
PAST DEFINITES

(Review Lesson XL. Study your table of parts, then write this from memory, making all the verbs past definite.)

1.	I came	16.	we came	31.	they came
2.	one had	17.	he was	32.	you went
3.	I went	18.	they took	33.	he was able
4.	he took	19.	we knew	34.	we saw
5.	he knew	20.	it was necessary	35.	you did
6.	I saw	21.	you came	36.	we were
7.	he did	22.	they read	37.	they went
8.	he led	23.	they sent	38.	we were able
9.	he came	24.	I was able	39.	they knew
10.	you had	25.	I wished	40.	we said
11.	he went	26.	they appeared	41.	they slept
12.	we took	27.	we did	42.	they were
13.	they saw	28.	they feared	43.	I knew
14.	we wrote	29.	he thought	44.	we wished
15.	he sent	30.	he ought	45.	they did

LESSON LI

REVIEW OF PAST TENSES

Write in French, and correct by the Appendix:

1. Whose fault (**la faute**) is it?
2. How is your mother?
3. We will go together at once.
4. I am going to stay away (**absent**) till evening.
5. He might be fifty years old.
6. What are you doing this afternoon?
7. I don't know; I will go walking with you.
8. I come from B..... Everything is going well down there.
9. I will tell you the rest in a minute.
10. Everybody was there.

FIFTH VERB LIST
PAST TENSES

The English past tense is expressed by three different tenses in French:

Imperfect	—**je parlais**	I was speaking, I spoke
Present Perf.	—**j'ai parlé**	I have spoken, I spoke
Past Definite	—**je parlai**	I spoke

Write in this same order the three past forms, first plural, of each of the following verbs:

1. to go
2. to have
3. to fight
4. to be acquainted with
5. to fear
6. to believe
7. to owe, ought
8. to say
9. to write
10. to send
11. to make
12. to appear
13. to take
14. to break
15. to hold

LESSON LII

NEWS FROM THREE FRONTS

From LE MATIN

(Printed at the top of the first page of this famous Paris newspaper.)

LUNDI 9 SEPTEMBRE 1918

DAILY LESSON IN ENGLISH

LES PHRASES USUELLES. — 9

Shall I take you to it ? = Voulez-vous que je vous
chall aï tèk iou tou itt y accompagne ?

(*Mot à mot*: Prendrai-je vous vers cela ?)

No I can find it by myself = Non. je saurai y aller
nò aï cann faïnnd itt baï maïsselff tout seul.

(*Mot à mot* : Non. je peux trouver cela par moi-même.)

Keep straight ahead = Continuez droit devant vous.
kîp streite ehéd (Mot à mot: **Poursuivez droit en avant.**)

La Guerre

1,476e jour de guerre

Communiqués officiels

FRONT FRANÇAIS

17 AOÛT. — 2 HEURES APRÈS-MIDI

Dans la région à **l'ouest de Roye,** grande activité de l'artillerie au cours de la nuit.

Au **sud de l'Avre,** nous avons continué notre progression dans le **bois des Loges** et atteint les lisières **est.**

Entre le Matz et l'Oise, nous avons repoussé de fortes attaques ennemies sur le **Monolithe** et la **ferme Carmoy** et maintenu nos positions.

Au **nord-ouest de Reims,** un coup de main ennemi sur la **Neuvilette** n'a pas obtenu de résultat.

FRONT BRITANNIQUE

17 AOÛT. — APRÈS-MIDI

La pression de nos troupes **au nord de la route de Roye** et au **nord de l'Ancre** a continué. **Nous avons réalisé des progrès** dans ces deux secteurs.

Hier, dans le voisinage de **Vieux-Berquin,** nos patrouilles ont soutenu de vifs combats. De nouveaux combats ont eu lieu pendant la nuit. **Nos troupes ont réalisé des progrès** dans ce secteur et fait des prisonniers aux environs de **Merris.**

FRONT AMÉRICAIN

17 AOÛT. — 9 HEURES SOIR

Dans les Vosges, nos troupes au cours d'une attaque locale réussie se sont emparées du village de Frapelle.

Hier, en Lorraine, un de nos aviateurs a abattu un appareil ennemi.

[*Frapelle*, dans l' arrondissement de *Saint-Dié*, à 10 kilomètres environ à l'est de cette sous-préfecture.]

SIXTH VERB LIST
FUTURE AND CONDITIONAL

Review Lesson XXXI and Lesson XXXVII.

1. I should wish
2. he will live
3. I shall see
4. he will come
5. it will be worth
6. we shall follow
7. she will laugh
8. they will break
9. they would put
10. I shall hold
11. he will follow
12. I shall be able
13. would you wish?
14. he would live
15. I shall come
16. it would please
17. he will take
18. he will wish
19. it will be necessary
20. they would break
21. we shall read
22. he will hold
23. it would be necessary
24. he will see
25. we should come
26. he will send
27. he would follow
28. she will be
29. he would hold
30. it will appear
31. he will die
32. we shall see
33. he will make
34. she will suffer
35. I shall know
36. they would come
37. he would know
38. he would suffer
39. he would die
40. he would laugh
41. they will make
42. we shall say
43. he would write
44. they would fear
45. I shall run

LESSON LIII

NEWSPAPER FRENCH

* *

Les sentiments avec lesquels les Etats-Unis sont entrés dans la guerre ont été exprimés avec un mélange d'in-

génuité, de bonne grâce et d'éloquence par un de leurs chefs, le général Johnson Hagood, à une réception de la Société des *French Homes* qui s'est constituée pour faire goûter aux Américains un peu de l'hospitalité française. Son discours n'a pas été répandu autant qu'il aurait dû l'être. Je regrette de n'en pouvoir traduire que quelques lignes.

« Le maréchal Joffre, a-t-il dit, et les autres grands généraux français sont des professeurs d'art militaire. Les soldats américains et moi-même, nous ne sommes que les élèves de cette grande école. Ils représentent la maturité virile de soldats français entraînés. Nous représentons la jeunesse d'une nation qui n'est pas militaire, la vigueur, l'esprit d'une Amérique inexpérimentée, mais ardente à apprendre.» Et il terminait par ces paroles, qui sont à la hauteur des plus beaux mouvements oratoires que je connaisse:

« Nous ne sommes venus en France pour réaliser aucun profit matériel. Nous ne prétendons à partager aucun butin. Nous sommes venus pour soutenir une cause qui nous paraît juste, et lorsque nous aurons remporté la victoire, nous nous en retournerons les mains vides. Nous n'emporterons que nos morts.»

SEVENTH VERB LIST

PRESENT TENSE

1.	he goes	9.	he fears	16.	do!
2.	they have	10.	do you believe	17.	he puts
3.	we drink			18.	they fear
4.	they lead	11.	tell!	19.	he dies
5.	he covers	12.	they say	20.	I move
6.	they believe	13.	I send	21.	it appears
7.	we go	14.	they write	22.	they do
8.	they drink	15.	are you going	23.	it rains

24. he reads
25. they read
26. I can
27. can I
28. they move
29. they can
30. they appear
31. he takes
32. they know
33. they know
34. we do
35. they go
36. I laugh
37. he breaks
38. they put
39. do you know
40. he suffers
41. he follows
42. I hold
43. they come
44. they hold
45. come!

LESSON LIV

NEWSPAPER FRENCH (Continued)

Ainsi, nos amis d'Amérique nous ont rendu le service de nous communiquer leur bonne humeur entre tant d'autres services, et si grands que nous ne pouvons encore les estimer à leur prix véritable. Ce qui nous a le plus frappés en les découvrant, c'est leur gaieté: non pas une gaieté extérieure, à gros rires, mais le rayonnement de grands garçons dont l'équilibre moral égale la santé physique.

Nous avions trop de raisons d'être tristes lorsqu'ils sont venus. Deuils et fatigues pesaient sur nous. Nous étions rentrés à la maison comme une famille au retour d'une cérémonie funèbre. C'était le soir, semblait-il. Nous nous tenions tous autour de la table, à nous compter. Le grand frère a ouvert la porte. Il a dit bonjour d'une belle voix claire, et tout de suite, avant de s'asseoir, il a remonté la mèche de la lampe. Puis, il a déballé ses provisions. A ce moment, on a frappé au dehors; nous avons frissonné. Lui, il s'est levé, en retroussant ses manches; il est sorti si gaillardement que nous avons été le rejoindre dans le corridor. Nous avions pris une part de la vie dont il débordait. Nous n'avons

pu nous contenter de le suivre, nous lui avons indiqué le chemin, nous l'avons précédé; enfin, nous lui avons montré comment nous avions fait, seuls, les premières fois..... Avant d'achever la tâche commune, les grands garçons calmes expliquent pourquoi ils sont venus et pourquoi ils ont apporté deux sortes d'outils.

« Il faut sarcler le champ avant de semer. Nous débarrasserons votre belle terre des fils de fer et des bêtes sauvages, puis nous planterons. Nous allons faire la plus raisonnable des associations. Pour bien comprendre notre apport réciproque, prenez dans votre grammaire le verbe *être* et le verbe *avoir*. Les verbes auxiliaires ont toujours servi à conjuguer les autres verbes. La France est le verbe être; l'Amérique est le verbe avoir. Vous, vous êtes, vous êtes la cellule, le passé, la race, la tradition. Nous, nous avons. Nous avons le sang, l'avenir, la force de l'argent, de la machine, du muscle. Peut-être êtes-vous plus riches que nous, mais vous risquiez d'être volés, d'être assassinés. En nous associant, nous évitons ce risque et nous nous assurons une part égale de dividendes: *Vous êtes et désormais vous aurez*; *nous avons et désormais nous serons*!»

EIGHTH VERB LIST

PRESENT AND PAST SUBJUNCTIVE

(May be omitted)

1. that he may have
2. that he might have
3. that I may be able
4. that they may see
5. that I may wish
6. that I may be
7. that I might be
8. that he may go
9. that I may know
10. that he may wish
11. that I may make
12. that I may wash
13. that one may be
14. that I may see
15. that they may come
16. that I may come

17. that we may wish
18. that we may take
19. that they may wash
20. that they may know
21. that I may have
22. that I might have
23. that they may wish
24. that he may take
25. that he may follow
26. that they may be
27. that they might be
28. that he may make
29. that they may be able
30. that he might hold

NINTH VERB LIST

NEGATIVES

(Use past definite for English simple past in this exercise)

1. they do not fight
2. he will never run
3. I will send two of them
4. we moved nothing
5. he will not suffer any more
6. they will never appear
7. I have not had (any) of it
8. we are not there
9. I will not have any of it
10. that I might be happy
11. he has not been able
12. he has taken none of it
13. they did not go there
14. no one has believed it
15. he understood none of it
16. they have led me there
17. fearing nothing
18. they saw no one
19. you never came
20. he has not lived long
21. we did not write to him
22. he never went there
23. we have had none of it
24. we have known him
25. we have written to you
26. we have sent it to him
27. I shall see him tomorrow
28. we shall read them at once
29. he would not know it
30. he will take ten of them

TENTH VERB LIST
INTERROGATIVE FORMS

(Use Est-ce que with the first ten sentences)

1. Are you ill?
2. Will she be there tomorrow?
3. Will you tell me the name?
4. Will he send me the money?
5. Would he come?
6. Would she suffer much?
7. Did the children break it?
8. Have you not written to him?
9. Are you going to stay?
10. Will you take a walk with me?
11. When does one get to Paris?
12. Whose house is this?
13. How many children had he?
14. How do you arrive?
15. What time does the train go?
16. Do you understand French?
17. Must I see your father?
18. Will the train leave in ten minutes?
19. Could you give me some money?
20. Has he many children?

APPENDIX

PERSONAL PRONOUNS

	Subject	*Direct Object*	*Indirect Object*	*Disjunctive*
First	I **je**	me **me, moi**	to me **me, moi**	moi
Person	we **nous**	us **nous**	to us **nous**	nous
Second	you **(tu)**	you **(te, toi)**	**to you** **(te, toi)**	(toi)
Person	**vous**	**vous**	**vous**	vous
	he, it **il**	him, it **le**	to him **lui**	lui
	she, it **elle**	her, it **la**	to her **lui**	elle
	one **on**		to it **lui**	lui
Third		himself **se**	to himself **se**	soi
Person		herself **se**	to herself **se**	soi
		itself **se**	to itself **se**	soi
	they(m) **ils**	them(m) **les**	to them (m) **leur**	eux
	they(f) **elles**	them (f) **les**	to them (f) **leur**	elles
		themselves **se**	to themselves **se**	soi
				quoi (rel. and inter.)

PRONOUNS

1 Possessive Adjectives
2 Possessive Pronouns
3 Interrogative Adjective
4 Interrogative Pronoun
5 Demonstrative Adjective
6 Demonstrative Pronoun

		Singular		Plural	
		Masculine	*Feminine*	*Masculine*	*Feminine*
1	my	mon	ma	mes	mes
2	mine	le mien	la mienne	les miens	les miennes
1	your	ton	ta	tes	tes
2	yours	le tien	la tienne	les tiens	les tiennes
1	your	votre	votre	vos	vos
2	yours	le vôtre	la vôtre	les vôtres	les vôtres
1	our	notre	notre	nos	nos
2	ours	le nôtre	la nôtre	les nôtres	les nôtres
1	their	leur	leur	leurs	leurs
2	theirs	le leur	la leur	les leurs	les leurs
3	which what	quel	quelle	quels	quelles
4	which	lequel	laquelle	lesquels	lesquelles
5	this, that	ce (cet)	cette	ces	ces
6	this (one) that (one)	celui	celle	ceux	celles
6	this one (here)	celui-ci	celle-ci	ceux-ci	celles-ci
6	that one (there)	celui-là	celle-là	ceux-là	celles-là

The Relative and Interrogative Pronouns, **qui, que, quoi, dont** —which do not change in form to show gender and number—have not been included in this table.

The Demonstratives **cela** and **ceci** have been omitted.

The Relatives **lequel, laquelle,** have not been emphasized. They are not so very common, and present some difficulties

IRREGULAR VERBS
USED IN THIS BOOK

Questions on the Formation of Tenses and Moods

The symbol † means that the *ll* is to be given the liquid sound or, less accurately, not sounded at all; or that the *gn* is to be sounded like *ny* in *canyon*.

From which Principal Part are the Present Indicative and Subjunctive formed?

From which Part is the Imperfect Indicative formed?

From which Part is the Future formed?

In **aimer** and **finir** how is the Future formed from the first Part?

How is the Present Conditional formed from the Future Indicative?

From which Part is the Past Definite formed?

Is this true in **être, atteindre, battre, conduire,** and **coudre?**

Is there any resemblance between the Past Definite and the Past Subjunctive?

What resemblance is there between the Present Indicative and the Present Imperative?

Is this true in **être, avoir,** and **savoir?**

PRES. INF.		PRES. PART.		PAST PART.	
FUT. IND.				PAST DEF. IND.	
PRES. COND.		IMPF. IND.		PAST SUBJ.	
aller, *to go*		**allant**		**allé -e**	
irai				**allai**	
irais		**allais**		**allasse**	
Pres. Ind. **vais**	**vas**	**va**	**allons**	**allez**	**vont**
Imper.	**va**		**allons**	**allez**	
Pres. Subj. †**aille**	†**ailles**	†**aille**	**allions**	**alliez**	†**aillent**

---

avoir, *to have*		**ayant**		**eu -e**	
aurai				**eus**	
aurais		**avais**		**eusse**	
Pres. Ind. **ai**	**as**	**a**	**avons**	**avez**	**ont**
Imper.	**aie**		**ayons**	**ayez**	
Pres. Subj. **aie**	**aies**	**ait**	**ayons**	**ayez**	**aient**

---

battre, *to beat* (also **combattre**)		**battant**		**battu -e**	
battrai				**battis**	
battrais		**battais**		**battisse**	
Pres. Ind. **bats**	**bats**	**bat**	**battons**	**battez**	**battent**
Imper.	**bats**		**battons**	**battez**	
Pres. Subj. **batte**	**battes**	**batte**	**battions**	**battiez**	**battent**

PRES. INF. / FUT. IND. / PRES. COND.	PRES. PART. / IMPF. IND.	PAST PART. / PAST DEF. IND. / PAST SUBJ.
boire, *to drink*	**buvant**	**bu -e**
boirai		**bus**
boirais	**buvais**	**busse**

Pres. Ind.	bois	bois	boit	buvons	buvez	boivent
Imper.		bois		buvons	buvez	
Pres. Subj.	boive	boives	boive	buvions	buviez	boivent

---

combattre, *to fight*, see **battre**
complaire, *to please*, see **plaire**
comprendre, *to understand*, see **prendre**

---

conduire. *to lead*	**conduisant**	**conduit -e**
conduirai		**conduisis**
conduirais	**conduisais**	**conduisisse**

Present Indicative

conduis	-duis	-duit	-duisons	-duisez	-duisent

Imperative

	-duis	-duisons	-duisez

Present Subjunctive

conduise	-duises	-duise	-duisions	-duisiez	-duisent

connaître, *to know* (also reconnaître)	**connaissant**	**connu -e**
connaîtrai		**connus**
connaîtrais	**connaissais**	**connusse**

Present Indicative

connais	-nais	-naît	-naissons	-naissez	-naissent

Imperative

	-nais	-naissons	-naissez

Present Subjunctive

connaisse	-naisses	-naisse	-naissions	-naissiez	-naissent

---

conquérir, *to conquer* (also reconquérir)	**conquérant**	**conquis -e**
conquerra		**conquis**
conquerrais	**conquérais**	**conquisse**

PRES. INF. PRES. PART. PAST PART.
FUT. IND. PAST DEF. IND.
PRES. COND. IMPF. IND. PAST SUBJ.

Present Indicative

conquiers	-quiers	-quiert	-quérons	-quérez	-quèrent

Imperative

	-quiers		-quérons	-quérez	

Present Subjunctive

conquière	-quières	-quière	-quérions	-quériez	-quièrent

---

construire, *to construct* construisant construit -e
construirai construisis
construirais construisais construisisse

Present Indicative

construis	-struis	-struit	-struisons	-struisez	-struisent

Imperative

	-struis		-struisons	-struisez	

Present Subjunctive

construise	-struises	-struise	-struisions	-struisiez	-struisent

contenir, *to contain*, see tenir

---

courir, *to run* (also par-courir and réparcourir) courant couru -e
courrai courus
courrais courais courusse

Pres. Ind.	cours	cours	court	courons	courez	courent
Imper.		cours		courons	courez	
Pres. Subj.	coure	coures	coure	courions	couriez	courent

---

couvrir, *to cover* (also dé-couvrir, offrir, ouvrir, récouvrir) couvrant couvert -e
couvrirai couvris
couvrirais couvrais couvrisse

Present Indicative

couvre	couvres	couvre	couvrons	couvrez	couvrent

Imperative

	couvre		couvrons	couvrez	

PRES. INF.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.
FUT. IND.		PAST DEF. IND.
PRES. COND.	IMPF. IND.	PAST SUBJ.

Present Subjunctive

couvre	couvres	couvre	couvrions	couvriez	couvrent

---

craindre, *to fear*	†craignant	craint -e
craindrai		†craignis
craindrais	†craignais	†craignisse

Present Indicative

crains	crains	craint	†craignons	†craignez	†craignent

Imperative

	crains	†craignons †craignez

Present Subjunctive

†craigne	†craignes	†craigne	†craignions	†craigniez	†craignent

---

croire, *to believe*	croyant	cru -e
croirai		crus
croirais	croyais	crûsse

Pres. Ind.	crois	crois	croit	croyons	croyez	croient
Imper.		crois		croyons	croyez	
Pres. Subj.	croie	croies	croie	croyions	croyiez	croient

---

découvrir, *to uncover, discover*, see **couvrir**
décrire, *to describe*, see **écrire**

---

devoir, *ought*	devant	dû, due
devrai		dus
devrais	devais	dusse

Pres. Ind.	dois	dois	doit	devons	devez	doivent
Imper.		dois		devons	devez	
Pres. Subj.	doive	doives	doive	devions	deviez	doivent

dire *to say* (also interdire, *to forbid*)	disant	dit -e
dirai		dis
dirais	disais	disse

Pres. Ind.	dis	dis	dit	disons	dites	disent

PRES. INF.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.
FUT. IND.		PAST DEF. IND.
PRES. COND.	IMPF. IND.	PAST SUBJ.

Imper.		dis		disons	dites	
Pres. Subj.	dise	dises	dise	disions	disiez	disent

---

dormir, *to sleep* (also mentir, partir, sentir, servir, sortir)		dormant		dormi		
dormirai				dormis		
dormirais		dormais		dormisse		
		Present Indicative				
dors	dors	dort	dormons	dormez	dorment	
		Imperative				
	dors		dormons	dormez		
		Present Subjunctive				
dorme	dormes	dorme	dormions	dormiez	dorment	

écrire, *to write* (also décrire)		écrivant		écrit -e		
écrirai				écrivis		
écrirais		écrivais		écrivisse		
Pres. Ind.	écris	écris	écrit	écrivons	écrivez	écrivent
Imper.		écris		écrivons	écrivez	
Pres. Subj.	écrive	écrives	écrive	écrivions	écriviez	écrivent

---

envoyer, *to send* (also renvoyer)		envoyant		envoyé -e		
enverrai				envoyai		
enverrais		envoyais		envoyasse		
Pres. Ind.	envoie	-voies	-voie	-voyons	-voyez	-voient
Imper.		envoie		-voyons	-voyez	
Pres. Subj.	envoie	-voies	-voie	-voyions	-voyiez	-voient

être, *to be*		étant		été		
serai				fus		
serais		étais		fusse		
Pres. Ind.	suis	es	est	sommes	êtes	sont
Imper.		sois		soyons	soyez	
Pres. Subj.	sois	sois	soit	soyions	soyiez	soient

PRES. INF. / FUT. IND. / PRES. COND.	PRES. PART. / IMPF. IND.	PAST PART. / PAST DEF. IND. / PAST SUBJ.
falloir, *to be necessary*		**fallu**
il faudra		**il fallut**
il faudrait	**il fallait**	**il fallût**
Pres. Ind. **il faut**		
Imper. Wanting		
Pres. Subj. **il †faille**		

---

†faillir, *to fail, just to miss*			**†faillant**		**†failli**	
faudrai or **†faillirai**					**faillis**	
faudrais or **†faillirais**			**†faillais**		**faillisse**	
Pres. Ind. (**faux faux**)			**faut**	(**†faillons †faillez**)		**†faillent**
Imper. Wanting						
Pres. Subj. Wanting						

---

faire, *to make*			**faisant**		**fait -e**	
ferai					**fis**	
ferais			**faisais**		**fisse**	
Pres. Ind. **fais**	**fais**	**fait**	**faisons**	**faites**	**font**	
Imper.	**fais**		**faisons**	**faites**		
Pres. Subj. **fasse**	**fasses**	**fasse**	**fassions**	**fassiez**	**fassent**	

---

lire, *to read* (also **relire**)			**lisant**		**lu -e**	
lirai					**lus**	
lirais			**lisais**		**lusse**	
Pres. Ind. **lis**	**lis**	**lit**	**lisons**	**lisez**	**lisent**	
Imper.	**lis**		**lisons**	**lisez**		
Pres. Subj. **lise**	**lises**	**lise**	**lisions**	**lisiez**	**lisent**	

---

mettre, *to put* (also **remettre**)			**mettant**		**mis -e**	
mettrai					**mis**	
mettrais			**mettais**		**misse**	
Pres. Ind. **mets**	**mets**	**met**	**mettons**	**mettez**	**mettent**	
Imper.	**mets**		**mettons**	**mettez**		
Pres. Subj. **mette**	**mettes**	**mette**	**mettions**	**mettiez**	**mettent**	

PRES. INF.		PRES. PART.		PAST PART.	
FUT. IND.				PAST DEF. IND.	
PRES. COND.		IMPF. IND.		PAST SUBJ.	
mourir, *to die*		mourant		mort -e	
mourrai				mourus	
mourrais		mourais		mourusse	
		Present Indicative			
meurs	meurs	meurt	mourons	mourez	meurent
		Imperative			
	meurs		mourons	mourez	
		Present Subjunctive			
meure	meures	meure	mourions	mouriez	meurent
mouvoir, *to move*		mouvant		mû -e	
mouvrai				mus	
mouvrais		mouvais		musse	
		Present Indicative			
meus	meus	meut	mouvons	mouvez	meuvent
		Imperative			
	meus		mouvons	mouvez	
		Present Subjunctive			
meuve	meuves	meuve	mouvions	mouviez	meuvent

---

offrir *to offer*, see couvrir
ouvrir, *to open*, see couvrir

---

paraître, *to appear*		paraissant		paru	
paraîtrai				parus	
paraîtrais		paraissait		parusse	
		Present Indicative			
parais	parais	paraît	paraissons	paraissez	paraissent
		Imperative			
	parais		paraissons	paraissez	
		Present Subjunctive			
paraisse	paraisses	paraisse	paraissions	paraissiez	paraissent

---

parcourir, see courir
partir, see dormir

PRES. INF.			PRES. PART.		PAST PART.	
FUT. IND.					PAST DEF. IND.	
PRES. COND.			IMPF. IND.		PAST SUBJ.	
plaire, *to please* (also complaire)			**plaisant**		**plu**	
plairai					**plus**	
plairais			**plaisais**		**plusse**	
Pres. Ind.	**plais**	**plais**	**plaît**	**plaisons**	**plaisez**	**plaisent**
Imper.		**plais**		**plaisons**	**plaisez**	
Pres. Subj.	**plaise**	**plaises**	**plaise**	**plaisions**	**plaisiez**	**plaisent**

---

pleuvoir, *to rain*			**pleuvant**		**plu**	
il pleuvra					**il plut**	
il pleuvrait			**il pleuvait**		**il plût**	
Pres. Ind.	**il pleut**					
Pres. Subj.	**il pleuve**					

---

pouvoir, *to be able, can*			**pouvant**		**pu**	
pourrai					**pus**	
pourrais			**pouvais**		**pusse**	
			Present Indicative			
peux or **puis**	**peux**	**peut**	**pouvons**	**pouvez**	**peuvent**	
			Present Subjunctive			
puisse	**puisses**	**puisse**	**puissions**	**puissiez**	**puissent**	

---

prendre, *to take* (also comprendre, reprendre)			**prenant**		**pris -e**	
prendrai					**pris**	
prendrais			**prenais**		**prisse**	
			Present Indicative			
prends	**prends**	**prend**	**prenons**	**prenez**	**prennent**	
			Imperative			
	prends		**prenons**	**prenez**		
			Present Subjunctive			
prenne	**prennes**	**prenne**	**prenions**	**preniez**	**prennent**	

---

rire, *to laugh*	**riant**	**ri**
rirai		**ris**
rirais	**riais**	**risse**

PRES. INF. FUT. IND. PRES. COND.	PRES. PART. IMPF. IND.			PAST PART. PAST DEF. IND. PAST SUBJ.	
Pres. Ind. ris	ris	rit	rions	riez.	rient
Imper.	ris		rions	riez	
Pres. Subj. rie	ries	rie	riions	riiez	rient

---

rompre, *to break* — **rompant** — **rompu -e**
romprai — **rompis**
romprais — **rompais** — **rompisse**

Present Indicative

romps	romps	rompt	rompons	rompez	rompent

Imperative

romps	rompons	rompez	

Present Subjunctive

rompe	rompes	rompe	rompions	rompiez	rompent

---

savoir, *to know* — **sachant** — **su -e**
saurai — **sus**
saurais — **savais** — **susse**

Present Indicative

sais	sais	sait	savons	savez	savent

Imperative

sais	savons	savez

Present Subjunctive

sache	saches	sache	sachions	sachiez	sachent

---

sentir, see **dormir**
servir, see **dormir**
sortir, see **dormir**

---

souffrir, *to suffer* — **souffrant** — **souffert -e**
souffrirai — **souffris**
souffrirais — **souffrais** — **souffrisse**

Present Indicative

souffre	souffres	souffre	souffrons	souffrez	souffrent

Imperative

souffre	souffrons	souffrez

Present Subjunctive

souffre	souffres	souffre	souffrions	souffriez	souffrent

PRES. INF.		PRES. PART.		PAST PART.	
FUT. IND.				PAST DEF. IND.	
PRES. COND.		IMPF. IND.		PAST. SUBJ.	
suivre, *to follow*		**suivant**		**suivi -e**	
suivrai				**suivis**	
suivrais		**suivais**		**suivisse**	
Pres. Ind. **suis**	**suis**	**suit**	**suivons**	**suivez**	**suivent**
Imper.	**suis**		**suivons**	**suivez**	
Pres. Subj. **suive**	**suives**	**suive**	**suivions**	**suiviez**	**suivent**

---

taire, *to be silent,* see **plaire**

---

tenir, *to hold,* (also con-					
tenir)		**tenant**		**tenu -e**	
tiendrai				**tins, tinmes**	
tiendrais		**tenais**		**tinsse**	
Pres. Ind. **tiens**	**tiens**	**tient**	**tenons**	**tenez**	**tiennent**
Imper.	**tiens**		**tenons**	**tenez**	
Pres. Subj. **tienne**	**tiennes**	**tienne**	**tenions**	**teniez**	**tiennent**

---

valoir, *to be worth*		**valant**		**valu -e**	
vaudrai				**valus**	
vaudrais		**valais**		**valusse**	
Pres. Ind. **vaux**	**vaux**	**vaut**	**valons**	**valez**	**valent**
Imper.	**vaux**		**valons**	**valez**	
Pres. Subj. †**vaille**	†**vailles**	†**vaille**	**valions**	**valiez**	†**vaillent**

---

venir, *to come* (also de-					
venir, provenir		**venant**		**venu -e**	
viendrai				**vins, vint, vinmes**	
viendrais		**venais**		**vinsse**	
		Present Indicative			
viens	**viens**	**vient**	venons	**venez**	**viennent**
		Imperative			
	viens		**venons**	**venez**	
		Present Subjunctive			
vienne	**viennes**	**vienne**	venions	**veniez**	**viennent**

PRES. INF.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.
FUT. IND.		PAST DEF. IND.
PRES. COND.	IMPF. IND.	PAST SUBJ.

vêtir, *to clothe* (also **dévêtir, revêtir**)			**vêtant**		**vêtu -e**	
vêtirai					**vêtis**	
vêtirais			**vêtais**		**vêtisse**	
Pres. Ind.	**vêts**	**vêts**	**vêt**	**vêtons**	**vêtez**	**vêtent**
Imper.		**vêts**		**vêtons**	**vêtez**	
Pres. Subj.	**vête**	**vêtes**	**vête**	**vêtions**	**vêtiez**	**vêtent**

---

vivre, *to live*			**vivant**		**vécu -e**	
vivrai					**vécus**	
vivrais			**vivais**		**vécusse**	
Pres. Ind.	**vis**	**vis**	**vit**	**vivons**	**vivez**	**vivent**
Imper.		**vis**		**vivons**	**vivez**	
Pres. Subj.	**vive**	**vives**	**vive**	**vivions**	**viviez**	**vivent**

---

voir, *to see*			**voyant**		**vu -e**	
verrai					**vis**	
verrais			**voyais**		**visse**	
Pres. Ind.	**vois**	**vois**	**voit**	**voyons**	**voyez**	**voient**
Imper.		**vois**		**voyons**	**voyez**	
Pres. Subj.	**voie**	**voies**	**voie**	**voyions**	**voyiez**	**voient**

---

vouloir, *to wish*			**voulant**		**voulu -e**	
voudrai					**voulus**	
voudrais			**voulais**		**voulusse**	
Present Indicative						
veux	**veux**	**veut**		**voulons**	**voulez**	**veulent**
Imperative						
	†veuille or veux			**†veuillons**	**†veuillez**	
Present Subjunctive						
†veuille	**†veuilles**	**†veuille**		**voulions**	**vouliez**	**†veuillent**

CONJUGATION OF AVOIR — TO HAVE

Present Infinitive		*Past Infinitive*	
voir	to have	avoir eu	to have had

Present Participle		*Perfect Participle*	
ayant	having	**ayant eu**	having had

Past Participle

eu (*m. s.*), **eue** (*f. s.*), **eus** (*m. pl.*), **eues** (*f. pl.*), had

INDICATIVE

SIMPLE TENSES		COMPOUND TENSES	
Present		*Past Indefinite*	
J'ai	I have	**J'ai eu**	I have had
Tu as	you have	**Tu as eu**	you have had
Il a	he has	**Il a eu**	he has had
Elle a	she has	**Elle a eu**	she has had
On a	one has, people have	**On a eu**	one has had, people have had
Nous avons	we have	**Nous avons eu**	we have had
Vous avez	you have	**Vous avez eu**	you have had
Ils ont	they have	**Ils ont eu**	they have had
Elles ont	they have	**Elles ont eu**	they have had
Imperfect		*Past Perfect*	
J'avais	I had *or* I used to have	**J'avais eu**	I had had
Tu avais	you had *or* used to have	**Tu avais eu**	you had had
Il avait	he had *or* used to have	**Il avait eu**	he had had
On avait	one (people) had *or* used to have	**On avait eu**	one had had
Nous avions	we had *or* used to have	**Nous avions eu**	we had had
Vous aviez	you had *or* used to have	**Vous aviez eu**	you had had
Ils avaient	they had *or* used to have	**Ils avaient eu**	they had had
Past Definite		*2nd form Past Perfect*	
J'eus	I had	**J'eus eu**	I had had
Tu eus	you had	**Tu eus eu**	you had had
Il eut	he had	**Il eut eu**	he had had
On eut	one had	**On eut eu**	one had had

Nous eûmes	we had	**Nous eûmes eu**	we had had
Vous eûtes	you had	**Vous eûtes eu**	you had had
Ils eurent	they had	**Ils eurent eu**	they had had

SIMPLE TENSES

Future

J'aurai	I shall *or* will have
Tu auras	you shall *or* will have
Il aura	he shall *or* will have
On aura	one shall *or* will have
Nous aurons	we shall *or* will have
Vous aurez	you shall *or* will have
Ils auront	they shall *or* will have

COMPOUND TENSES

Future Perfect

J'aurai eu	I shall *or* will have had
Tu auras eu	you shall *or* will have had
Il aura eu	he shall *or* will have had
On aura eu	one shall *or* will have had
Nous aurons eu	we shall *or* will have had
Vous aurez eu	you shall *or* will have had
Ils auront eu	they shall *or* will have had

CONDITIONAL

Present		*Past*	
		1st Form	*2nd Form*
J'aurais	I should *or* would have	**J'aurais eu** I should *or* would have had	**J'eusse eu**
Tu aurais	you should *or* would have	**Tu aurais eu** you should *or* would have had	**Tu eusses eu**
Il aurait	he should *or* would have	**Il aurait eu** he should *or* would have had	**Il eût eu**
On aurait	one should *or* would have	**On aurait eu** one should *or* would have had	**On eût eu**
Nous aurions	we should *or* would have	**Nous aurions eu** we should *or* would have had	**Nous eussions eu**
Vous auriez	you should *or* would have	**Vous auriez eu** you should *or* would have had	**Vous eussiez eu**
Ils auraient	they should *or* would have	**Ils auraient eu** they should *or* would have had	**Ils eussent eu**

IMPERATIVE

Aie	have
Ayons	let us have
Ayez	have

SUBJUNCTIVE

SIMPLE TENSES		COMPOUND TENSES	
Present		*Past*	
Que j'aie	that I may have	**Que j'aie eu**	that I may have had
Que tu aies	that you may have	**Que tu aies eu**	that you may have had
Qu'il ait	that he may have	**Qu'il ait eu**	that he may have had
Qu'on ait	that one may have	**Qu'on ait eu**	that one may have had
Que nous ayons	that we may have	**Que nous ayons eu**	that we may have had
Que vous ayez	that you may have	**Que vous ayez eu**	that you may have had
Qu'ils aient	that they may have	**Qu'ils aient eu**	that they may have had
Imperfect		*Past Perfect*	
Que j'eusse	that I might have	**Que j'eusse eu**	that I might have had
Que tu eusses	that you might have	**Que tu eusses eu**	that you might have had
Qu'il eût	that he might have	**Qu'il eût eu**	that he might have had
Qu'on eût	that one might have	**Qu'on eût eu**	that one might have had
Que nous eussions	that we might have	**Que nous eussions eu**	that we might have had
Que vous eussiez	that you might have	**Que vous eussiez eu**	that you might have had
Qu'ils eussent	that they might have	**Qu'ils eussent eu**	that they might have had

CONJUGATION OF ÊTRE = TO BE

Present Infinitive		*Past Infinitive*	
être	to be	**avoir été**	to have been

Present Participle		*Perfect Participle*	
étant	being	**ayant été**	having been

Past Participle

été (*invariable*) been

INDICATIVE

SIMPLE TENSES		COMPOUND TENSES	
Present		*Past Indefinite*	
Je suis	I am	**J'ai été**	I have been
Tu es	you are	**Tu as été**	you have been
Il est	he is	**Il a été**	he has been
Elle est	she is	**Elle a été**	she has been
On est	one is, people are	**On a été**	one has been, people have been
Nous sommes	we are	**Nous avons été**	we have been
Vous êtes	you are	**Vous avez été**	you have been
Ils sont	they are	**Ils ont été**	they have been
Elles sont	they are	**Elles ont été**	they have been
Imperfect		*Past Perfect*	
J'étais	I was *or* used to be	**J'avais été**	I had been
Tu étais	you were *or* used to be	**Tu avais été**	you had been
Il était	he was *or* used to be	**Il avait été**	he had been
On était	one was, used to be, people were, used to be	**On avait été**	one had been, people had been
Nous étions	we were *or* used to be	**Nous avions été**	we had been
Vous étiez	you were *or* used to be	**Vous aviez été**	you had been
Ils étaient	they were *or* used to be	**Ils avaient été**	they had been
Past Definite		*2nd Form Past Perfect*	
Je fus	I was	**J'eus été**	I had been
Tu fus	you were	**Tu eus été**	you had been

Il fut	he was	**Il eut été**	he had been
On fut	one was	**On eut été**	one had been
Nous fûmes	we were	**Nous eûmes été**	we had been
Vous fûtes	you were	**Vous eûtes été**	you had been
Ils furent	they were	**Ils eurent été**	they had been

Future		*Future Perfect*	
Je serai	I shall *or* will be	**J'aurai été**	I shall *or* will have been
Tu seras	you shall *or* will be	**Tu auras été**	you shall *or* will have been
Il sera	he shall *or* will be	**Il aura été**	he shall *or* will have been
On sera	one shall *or* will be	**On aura été**	one shall *or* will have been

SIMPLE TENSES — COMPOUND TENSES

Future		*Future Perfect*	
Nous serons	we shall *or* will be	**Nous aurons été**	we shall *or* will have been
Vous serez	you shall *or* will be	**Vous aurez été**	you shall *or* will have been
Ils seront	they shall *or* will be	**Ils auront été**	they shall *or* will have been

CONDITIONAL

Present		*Past* *1st Form*	*2nd Form*
Je serais	I should *or* would be	**J'aurais été**	**J'eusse été**
		I should *or* would have been	
Tu serais	you should *or* would be	**Tu aurais été**	**Tu eusses été**
		you should *or* would have been	
Il serait	he should *or* would be	**Il aurait été**	**Il eût été**
		he should *or* would have been	
On serait	one should *or* would be	**On aurait été**	**On eût été**
		one should *or* would have been	
Nous serions	we should *or* would be	**Nous aurions été**	**Nous eussions été**
		we should *or* would have been	

Vous seriez	you should *or* would be	**Vous auriez été**	**Vous eussiez été**
		you should *or* would have been	
Ils seraient	they should *or* would be	**Ils auraient été**	**Ils eussent été**
		they should *or* would have been	

IMPERATIVE

Sois	be
Soyons	let us be
Soyez	be

SUBJUNCTIVE

Present		*Past*	
Que je sois	that I may be	**Que j'aie été**	that I may have been
Que tu sois	that you may be	**Que tu aies été**	that you may have been
Qu'il soit	that he may be	**Qu'il ait été**	that he may have been
Qu'on soit	that one may be	**Qu'on ait été**	that one may have been
Que nous soyons	that we may be	**Que nous ayons été**	that we may have been
Que vous soyez	that you may be	**Que vous ayez été**	that you may have been
Qu'ils soient	that they may be	**Qu'ils aient été**	that they may have been

Imperfect		*Past Perfect*	
Que je fusse	that I might be	**Que j'eusse été**	that I might have been
Que tu fusses	that you might be	**Que tu eusses été**	that you might have been
Qu'il fût	that he might be	**Qu'il eût été**	that he might have been
Qu'on fût	that one might be	**Qu'on eût été**	that one might have been
Que nous fussions	that we might be	**Que nous eussions été**	that we might have been
Que vous fussiez	that you might be	**Que vous eussiez été**	that you might have been
Qu'ils fussent	that they might be	**Qu'ils eussent été**	that they might have been

FIRST CONJUGATION ENDING IN -ER
PARLER = TO SPEAK

Present Infinitive		*Past Infinitive*	
parler	to speak	**avoir parlé**	to have spoken
Present Participle		*Perfect Participle*	
parlant	speaking	**ayant parlé**	having spoken

Past Participle

parlé (*m. s.*), **parlée** (*f. s.*), **parlés** (*m. pl.*), **parlées** (*f. pl.*,) spoken

INDICATIVE

SIMPLE TENSES		COMPOUND TENSES	
Present		*Past Indefinite*	
Je parle	I speak *or* I am speaking	**J'ai parlé**	**I** have spoken
Tu parles	you speak *or* you are speaking	**Tu as parlé**	**you** have spoken
Il parle	he speaks *or* he is speaking	**Il a parlé**	**he** has spoken
Elle parle	she speaks *or* she is speaking	**Elle a parlé**	**she** has spoken
On parle	one speaks *or* one is speaking	**On a parlé**	**one** has spoken
Nous parlons	we speak *or* we are speaking	**Nous avons parlé**	**we** have spoken
Vous parlez	you speak *or* you are speaking	**Vous avez parlé**	**you** have spoken
Ils parlent	they speak *or* they are speaking	**Ils ont parlé**	**they** have spoken
Elles parlent	they speak *or* they are speaking	**Elles ont parlé**	they have spoken
Imperfect		*Past Perfect*	
Je parlais	I was speaking, used to speak	**J'avais parlé**	I had spoken

Tu parlais	you were speaking, used to speak	**Tu avais parlé**	you had spoken
Il parlait	he was speaking, used to speak	**Il avait parlé**	he had spoken
On parlait	one was speaking, used to speak	**On avait parlé**	one had spoken
Nous parlions	we were speaking, used to speak	**Nous avions parlé**	we had spoken
Vous parliez	you were speaking, used to speak	**Vous aviez parlé**	you had spoken
Ils parlaient	they were speaking, used to speak	**Ils avaient parlé**	they had spoken

Past Definite		*2nd Form Past Perfect*	
Je parlai	I spoke	**J'eus parlé**	I had spoken
Tu parlas	you spoke	**Tu eus parlé**	you had spoken
Il parla	he spoke	**Il eut parlé**	he had spoken
On parla	one spoke	**On eut parlé**	one had spoken
Nous parlâmes	we spoke	**Nous eûmes parlé**	we had spoken
Vous parlâtes	you spoke	**Vous eûtes parlé**	you had spoken
Ils parlèrent	they spoke	**Ils eurent parlé**	they had spoken

Future		*Future Perfect*	
Je parlerai	I shall *or* will speak	**J'aurai parlé**	I shall *or* will have spoken
Tu parleras	you shall *or* will speak	**Tu auras parlé**	you shall *or* will have spoken
Il parlera	he shall *or* will speak	**Il aura parlé**	he shall *or* will have spoken
On parlera	one shall *or* will speak	**On aura parlé**	one shall *or* will have spoken
Nous parlerons	we shall *or* will speak	**Nous aurons parlé**	we shall *or* will have spoken

Vous parlerez	you shall *or* will speak	**Vous aurez parlé**	you shall *or* will have spoken
Ils parleront	they shall *or* will speak	**Ils auront parlé**	they shall *or* will have spoken

CONDITIONAL

Present		*Past*	
		1st Form	*2nd Form*
Je parlerais	I should *or* would speak	**J'aurais parlé**	**J'eusse parlé** I should *or* would have spoken
Tu parlerais	you should *or* would speak	**Tu aurais parlé**	**Tu eusses parlé** you should *or* would have spoken
Il parlerait	he should *or* would speak	**Il aurait parlé**	**Il eût parlé** he should *or* would have spoken
On parlerait	one should *or* would speak	**On aurait parlé**	**On eût parlé** one should *or* would have spoken
Nous parlerions	we should *or* would speak	**Nous aurions parlé**	**Nous eussions parlé** we should *or* would have spoken
Vous parleriez	you should *or* would speak	**Vous auriez parlé**	**Vous eussiez parlé** you should *or* would have spoken
Ils parleraient	they should *or* would speak	**Ils auraient parlé**	**Ils eussent parlé** they should *or* would have spoken

IMPERATIVE

Parle speak
Parlons let us speak
Parlez speak

SUBJUNCTIVE

SIMPLE TENSES		COMPOUND TENSES	
Present		*Past*	
Que je parle	that I may speak	**Que j'aie parlé**	that I may have spoken
Que tu parles	that you may speak	**Que tu aies parlé**	that you may have spoken
Qu'il parle	that he may speak	**Qu'il ait parlé**	that he may have spoken

Qu'on parle	that one may speak	**Qu'on ait parlé**	that one may have spoken
Que nous parlions	that we may speak	**Que nous ayons parlé**	that we may have spoken
Que vous parliez	that you may speak	**Que vous ayez parlé**	that you may have spoken
Qu'ils parlent	that they may speak	**Qu'ils aient parlé**	that they may have spoken

Imperfect		*2nd Form Past Perfect*	
Que je parlasse	that I might speak	**Que j'eusse parlé**	that I might have spoken
Que tu parlasses	that you might speak	**Que tu eusses parlé**	that you might have spoken
Qu'il parlât	that he might speak	**Qu'il eût parlé**	that he might have spoken
Qu'on parlât	that one might speak	**Qu'on eût parlé**	that one might have spoken
Que nous parlassions	that we might speak	**Que nous eussions parlé**	that we might have spoken
Que vous parlassiez	that you might speak	**Que vous eussiez parlé**	that you might have spoken
Qu'ils parlassent	that they might speak	**Qu'ils eussent parlé**	that they might have spoken

---

Exercise in Lesson 5

1. un grand homme
2. une petite chaise
3. une jolie couverture
4. sur le lit propre
5. le gros estomac
6. la main froide
7. le petit pied
8. la grosse femme
9. la maison propre
10. les fenêtres ouvertes
11. les photographies intéressantes
12. le livre bleu
13. les petites filles
14. sur la table ronde
15. les jolies femmes
16. une petite bouche
17. une porte ouverte
18. une chambre intéressante
19. dans un petit jardin
20. une bouche ouverte
21. un gros nez
22. les yeux ouverts
23. la couverture chaude
24. les dents sales
25. une petite tête

Exercise in Lesson 7

1. ma	11. mon	1. le père de la famille
2. notre	12. nos	2. la mère de six enfants
3. sa	13. vos	3. le portrait de ma grand'mère
4. sa	14. leurs	4. une photographie des trois enfants
5. leur	15. leur	5. la tête de l'enfant
6. son	16. sa	6. le fils de mon amie (ami)
7. leur	17. ses	7. la mère de mon père
8. votre	18. ses	8. le mari de ma servante
9. mon	19. mes	9. la fenêtre de la chambre
10. mon	20. sa	10. la jambe du garçon
		11. les oreilles du bébé
		12. les yeux bleus des petits enfants

Exercise in Lesson 8

1. Êtes-vous fatigué (fatiguée, fatigués, fatiguées)? (How do these four forms of adjectives change the meaning of the sentence?)
2. Je ne suis pas fatigué (fatiguée).
3. Sont-ils malades?
4. Ils ne sont pas malades.
5. Nous sommes seuls (seules).
6. Vous êtes aimable (aimables).
7. Elle est petite.
8. Il n'est pas grand.
9. Sont-ils propres?
10. Ils ne sont pas propres.
11. Ils sont sales.
12. Est-elle grosse?
13. Elle n'est pas grosse.
14. Sont-ils grands? (Sont-elles grandes).
15. Ils sont grands. (Elles sont grandes.)
16. Ils ne sont pas très grands. (etc.)
17. Nous sommes très fatigués (fatiguées).
18. Est-elle jolie?
19. Elle n'est pas jolie.
20. Elle est très intéressante.

Exercise in Lesson 9

1. de la soupe
2. du beurre
3. des petits pois
4. des haricots
5. des pommes de terre
6. du vin
7. du café
8. du chocolat
9. de l'encre
10. des couvertures

Exercise in Lesson 10

1. Elle est petite
2. Elle a froid
3. Elle est jolie
4. Elle a faim
5. Les hommes sont fatigués
6. Ils ont soif
7. Ma mère a raison
8. J'ai tort
9. Vous avez raison — vous avez tort
10. Les enfants sont fatigués
11. Ils ont sommeil
12. La femme est malade
13. Elle a faim
14. Nous n'avons pas faim
15. Nous avons soif
16. Avez-vous sommeil?
17. Nous n'avons pas sommeil
18. Êtes-vous fatigués?
19. Nous ne sommes pas fatigués
20. Nous avons froid

Exercise in Lesson 11

1. Êtes-vous malade?
   Est-ce que vous êtes malade?
   Vous êtes malade, n'est-ce pas?
2. Avez-vous du pain?
   Est-ce que vous avez du pain?
   Vous avez du pain, n'est-ce pas?
3. Est-elle jolie?
   Est-ce qu'elle est jolie?
   Elle est jolie, n'est-ce pas?
4. Votre chambre a-t-elle deux fenêtres?
   Est-ce que votre chambre a deux fenêtres?
   Votre chambre a deux fenêtres, n'est-ce pas?
5. Monsieur votre mari est-il dans le jardin?
   Est-ce que Monsieur votre mari est dans le jardin?
   Monsieur votre mari est dans le jardin, n'est-ce pas?

6. Avez-vous des enfants?
   Est-ce que vous avez des enfants?
   Vous avez des enfants, n'est-ce pas?
7. Avez-vous froid?
   Est-ce que vous avez froid?
   Vous avez froid, n'est-ce pas?
8. L'enfant a-t-il sommeil?
   Est-ce que l'enfant a sommeil?
   L'enfant a sommeil, n'est-ce pas?
9. Les fenêtres sont-elles petites?
   Est-ce que les fenêtres sont petites?
   Les fenêtres sont petites, n'est-ce pas?
10. Avez-vous un arbre dans votre jardin?
    Est-ce que vous avez un arbre dans votre jardin?
    Vous avez un arbre dans votre jardin, n'est-ce pas?

Exercise in Lesson 13

1. Elle donne [ell dunn].
2. Nous travaillons [noo trah-vye-on].
3. A-t-il? [ah-teel].
4. Vous arrivez [voo zar-ree-vay].
5. Il ne cherche pas [eel nuh shersh pah].
6. Ils sont [eel son(k)].
7. Ils ont [eel zon(k)].
8. Ne parle-t-elle pas? [nuh parl-tell pah].
9. Elle écoute [ell ay-koot].
10. Nous ne trouvons pas [noo nuh troo-von pah].
11. Ils arrivent [eel zar-reev].
12. Vous ne portez pas [voo nuh por-tay pah].
13. Nous regardons [noo ruh-gar-don(k)].
14. Il parle [eel parl].
15. Elle n'apporte pas [ell nap- port pah].
16. Il fume [eel feem].
17. Monte-t-il? [mon-tuh-teel].
18. Il ne regarde pas [eel nuh ruh-gard pah].
19. Nous écoutons [noo zay-koo-ton(k)].
20. Nous apportons [noo zap-por-ton(k)].
21. Ils ne travaillent pas [eel nuh trah-vye pah].
22. Est-ce qu'ils fument? [ess-keel feem].

23. Il dîne [eel deen].
24. Nous ne donnons pas [noo nuh dun-non pah].
25. Dînez-vous? [dee-nay voo].
26. Ai-je [ay-zh].
27. Chercher [shershay].
28. Est-ce qu'il ne fume pas? [ess-keel nuh feem pah].
29. Trouve-t-il? [troov-teel].
30. Écoutent-ils? [ay-koot-teel].
31. Cherche-t-elle? [shersh-tell].
32. Vous trouvez [voo troo-vay].
33. Suis-je? [swee-zh].
34. Être [ett-r].
35. Montrent-ils? [mon-tr--teel].
36. Nous trouvons [noo troo-von(k)].
37. Vous cherchez [voo shershay].
38. Il n'écoute pas [eel nay-koot pah].
39. Ils montrent [eel mon-tr].
40. Je travaille [zhuh trah-vye].
41. Ils donnent [eel dunn].
42. Ils arrivent [eel zar-reev].
43. Vous montrez [voo mon-tray].
44. Il porte [eel port].
45. Ils apportent [eel zaport].
46. Vous ne travaillez pas [voo nuh trah-vye-ay pah].
47. Est-ce que nous portons [ess kuh noo por-ton].
48. Elle ne donne pas [ell nuh dunn pah].
49. Avoir [ah-vwahr].
50. Est-ce qu'ils ne dînent pas? [ess-keel nuh deen pah].

Exercise in Lesson 15

1. Cherchez la femme! [shershay lah fam].
2. Regardez! la fenêtre est ouverte! [ruh-gar-day lah fuh-nett-r eh too-vairt].
3. Montrez-moi la chambre! [mon-tray mwah lah sham-br].
4. Écoutons! [ay-koo-ton(k)].
5. N'écoutez pas! [nay-koo-tay pah].
6. Regardez le bébé malade! [ruh-gar-day luh bay-bay mah-ladd].
7. Je lui donne du lait [zhuh louie dunn dee lay].
8. Ne lui donnez pas de lait! [nuh louie dunn-ay pah duh lay].

9. Est-ce que vous avez des légumes? [ess-kuh voo zah-vay day lay-gheem].
10. Voilà des pois! [vwah-lah day pwah].
11. Donnez-moi des pois! [dunn-ay mwah day pwah].
12. Où est madame votre mère? [oo eh mah-damm voh-tr mair].
13. Est-ce que madame votre mère est chez elle? [ess kuh mah-damm voh-tr mair eh shay zell].
    Madame votre mère est-elle chez elle?
    Madame votre mère est chez elle, n'est-ce pas? [ness pah.]
14. Oui, mademoiselle, je l'appelle [wee mad-mwah zell zhuh lap-pell].
15. Ne l'appelez pas, s'il vous plaît! [nuh lap-pell-ay pah seel voo play].
16. Je veux vous parler [zhuh vuh voo par-lay].
17. Ne lui parlons pas! [nuh louie par-lon(k) pah].
18. Apportez-moi de l'eau, s'il vous plaît! [ap-por-tay-mwah dull o seel voo play].
19. Que voulez-vous? [kuhh voo-lay voo]. de l'eau chaude? [duh lo showed].
20. Je ne peux pas trouver ma mère [zhuh nuh puh pah troo-vay mah mair].
21. Montrez-moi votre maison! [voh-tr may-zon(k)].
22. Ne fumons pas! [nuh feemon pah].
23. Dînons! [dee-non(k)].
24. J'ai faim [zhay fam] (to rhyme with ham).
25. Vous avez raison. Je veux dîner ici [voo-za-vay ray-zon(k) zhuh vuh (to rhyme with huh) dee-nay ee-see].

Exercise in Lesson 20

1. Ils *or* elles viennent souvent. 2. J'ai assez de (la) viande. 3. Il est déjà à Paris. 4. Les enfants sont partout. 5. Apportez-moi de l'eau tout de suite! 6. Vous parlez trop vite. 7. Nous travaillons quelquefois. 8. Il ne travaille jamais. 9. Vous ne pouvez pas fumer ici. 10. Ils travaillent toujours. 11. Nous dînons trop tard. 12. Eh bien, allons. 13. Où sommes-nous maintenant? 14. Il arrive aujourd'hui. 15. Ils marchent lentement. 16. Parlez doucement s'il vous plaît. 17. Vous marchez trop vite. 18. Est-ce que vous mangez encore? Mangez-vous encore? 19. Je le vois quelquefois. 20. Montrez-moi la

lettre encore. 21. Je vais fumer maintenant. 22. Écoutez votre mère, mon fils? *Better*, Écoute ta mère, mon fils. 23. Voici les enfants! Regardez surtout la petite fille! 24. Portez le livre à ma chambre! 25. Cherchez la mère de l'enfant. 26. Je ne peux *or* puis pas la trouver. 27. Allez-vous-en! Trouvez la femme! 28. Je vais la chercher. 29. Il arrive toujours très tard. 30. Il va me donner de l'argent. 31. Vous avez assez d'argent. 32. Allons maintenant dans la maison. 33. Nous voyons voir la femme à la fenêtre. 34. Il ne peut pas manger la viande. 35. Est-ce que vous savez où est la maison? *or* Savez-vous où est la maison? 36. Je ne sais pas où elle est. 37. Voulez-vous venir avec moi? 38. Il ne peut pas dîner souvent avec vous. 39. Il demeure maintenant à la rue Wilson. 40. Il a quelquefois froid et il a souvent faim. 41. Je n'ai pas toujours raison. 42. Vous n'avez pas souvent tort.

Exercise in Lesson 21

1. Nous ne buvons jamais de vin chez nous. 2. Les enfants ne boivent ni thé ni café. 3. Ils ne boivent que du lait. 4. Mon frère n'est pas bien. 5. Il ne mange jamais de viande. 6. J'ai faim. Mangeons maintenant! 7. Apportez-moi un verre d'eau, s'il vous plaît, j'ai bien soif. 8. Je vais chercher du lait pour les enfants. 9. Voici le menu de votre dîner. 10. Je veux dîner avec vous au restaurant. 11. Dînez avec moi chez moi! 12. Je vois les femmes dans leur maison *or* chez elles. 13. Chez qui dînez-vous aujourd'hui? 14. Je dîne avec des amis chez les White. 15. Je viens de chez vous.

Exercise in Lesson 22

1. Un garçon âgé de douze ans. 2. Une jeune fille âgée de douze ans. 3. A quarante ans. 4. Un homme de vingt ans. 5. Il a quarante-neuf ans. 6. Le train arrive tous les jours. 7. Âgé de quatre-vingt-neuf ans. 8. A l'âge de soixante-onze. 9. Il était ici il y a dix jours. 10. Il a soixante-dix-huit ans. 11. Restez pendant cinq minutes! 12. Il y a une heure. 13. Il y a deux mois. 14. Au bout de dix jours. 15. Il y a une semaine. 16. Au bout de six semaines. 17. Quel âge monsieur votre oncle a-t-il? 18. Il a soixante-dix-sept ans. 19. Quel âge

avez-vous? 20. Quel âge a-t-elle? 21. Quel âge ai-je? 22. Je suis ici depuis six mois. 23. Restez chez vous pendant cinq minutes! 24. Au bout de quinze jours il était malade. 25. Il est ici tous les jours. 26. Je n'ai que douze ans. 27. Il y a sept jours dans une semaine.

Exercise in Lesson 23

1. Il ne sait plus où il est.
2. Vous allez voir si je n'ai pas faim.
3. N'ai-je pas raison de penser que vous êtes mon ami?
4. Vous avez raison de le penser.
5. Nous ne voulons voir personne.
6. N'allez pas trop vite, monsieur.
7. Savez-vous combien d'argent je vais donner?
8. Eh bien, votre fils, comment va-t-il?
9. Il se porte bien. Seulement il dit qu'il n'y a pas de cigares en France.
10. Pauvre garçon! Voici des cigares. Je vous les donne pour votre garçon.
11. Vous êtes bien le fils de votre père.
12. Je vais dîner chez vous avec Madame votre mère.
13. Restons, voulez-vous?
14. Restez là.
15. Ne dites rien.
16. Écoutez-moi bien.
17. Je vous écoute.
18. Je ne vous demande rien.
19. Je ne veux rien savoir.
20. Eh bien, moi, je veux tout dire.
21. J'ai tort de vous dire tout.
22. Ils savent ce que je vais faire.
23. Allons les voir, voulez-vous?
24. Dans une heure il va partir.
25. Vous le savez bien.
26. Oui, je le sais.
27. J'ai tort de parler de moi.
28. Si vous m'aimez, moi aussi, je vous aime.

Exercise in Lesson 26

1. Ils meurent de faim. 2. J'ai vu les femmes. 3. Je les ai vues. 4. Les femmes sont venues. 5. Ils ne veulent pas le faire. 6. Est-ce que vous avez vu la maison? 7. Je ne l'ai jamais vue. 8. Tous les enfants lisent vos livres. 9. Mon frère est parti aujourd'hui. 10. Les enfants sont sortis. 11. Je vais les chercher. 12. Restez ici! 13. Ils vont retourner tout de suite. 14. La femme est morte. 15. Il ne peut pas me voir. 16. Je n'ai pas pu le faire. 17. Il a marché vite. 18. J'ai mis de l'argent sur la table. 19. J'ai reçu les lettres. 20. Je les ai reçues. 21. Nous les connaissons. 22. Cherchez les livres! 23. Nous les avons déjà trouvés. 24. Ma sœur est restée ici. 25. Il ne va pas venir. 26. J'ai écrit beaucoup de lettres. 27. Écoutez les enfants! 28. Je les écoute. 29. Dites-moi ce que vous faites! 30. Nous avons vu les enfants. 31. Nous les avons vus à la fenêtre.

Exercise in Lesson 27

1. un grand jardin
2. la dernière heure
3. tous les jours
4. sa petite église
5. son petit village
6. une femme malheureuse
7. avec sa jeune amie
8. les cheveux rouges
9. les blanches épaules
10. aux pauvres gens
11. le portrait de sa vieille mère
12. le fils d'une pauvre femme
13. à la maison de ma vieille et chère amie
14. les grands yeux noirs
15. votre petite cuisine
16. à cheveux blancs
17. les mains grandes ouvertes
18. un verre d'eau fraîche
19. ses beaux cheveux noirs
20. pauvre cher homme
21. avec leurs yeux grands ouverts
22. une brave femme
23. un grand jeune homme
24. toute la rue
25. la bouche ouverte
26. son petit nez rouge
27. le meilleur homme du monde
28. mes chers amis

Exercise in Lesson 31

1. Nous avions dit.
2. Vous étiez.
3. Ils ne meurent pas.
4. Il est venu.
5. Vous étiez allés.
6. Ils sortent.

7. Je suis parti.
8. Vous êtes tombé(s).
9. Vous ne connaissiez pas.
10. Ils étaient venus.
11. Est-ce que j'arrive?
12. Est-ce que nous ne les avons pas?
13. Vous aviez eu.
14. Nous ne buvions pas.
15. Ils ne venaient pas.
16. Ils étaient allés.
17. Vous les voyez.
18. Ils n'ont pas écrit.
19. Nous restions.
20. Vous le connaissez.
21. J'étais arrivé.
22. Il entre.
23. Vous avez bu.
24. Nous venons.
25. Ils étaient sortis.
26. Elle tombait.
27. Je l'ai connu.
28. Nous sommes morts.
29. Ils avaient bu.
30. Vous étiez mort(s).
31. Je n'ai pas eu.
32. Je ne bois pas.
33. Je ne savais pas.
34. Nous avions pu.
35. Il ne voulait pas.
36. Ils ne nous voyaient pas.
37. Vous aviez écrit.
38. Je recevais.
39. Il n'a pas écrit.
40. Ils n'ont pas fini.
41. Nous avons mis.
42. Ne disait-il pas?
43. Ils ont été.
44. Est-ce que vous ne savez pas?
45. Ils ont pu.
46. Je ne sortais pas.
47. Vous partiez.
48. Nous étions tombés.
49. Vous n'avez pas reçu.
50. Nous entrions.
51. Ils mettaient.
52. J'avais été.
53. Il mourait.
54. Vous pouviez.
55. Elle avait vu.
56. Ils reçoivent.
57. Elle était restée.
58. Nous n'avions pas eu.
59. Vous ne dites pas.
60. Ils étaient sortis.

Exercise in Lesson 35

1. Je rentrerai le mercredi 18 mai, à une heure.
2. Tous les jeudis et tous les dimanches nous dînons chez ma mère.
3. Il était mort le 14 novembre, à sept heures du matin.
4. Nous arriverons le samedi 28 mai, vers quatre heures de l'après-midi.
5. Je l'ai vue un vendredi soir du mois de novembre.

Exercise in Lesson 38

1. Il y avait alors en France une grande guerre.
2. Dans la maison il n'y avait qu'une petite fille de dix ans.

3. Il y a partout des enfants.
4. Demain il y aura de la soupe.
5. Combien de chambres y a-t-il dans la maison?
6. Il y en a six.
7. A-t-il beaucoup d'argent? Il en a assez.
8. Je viens de lire une lettre que sa mère lui écrivait il y a trois semaines.

Exercise in Lesson 39

(In many sentences it is possible to give either the imperfect or the present perfect tense. If that is your only mistake, disregard it.)

1. Elle ne disait rien.
2. On ne sait rien de tout cela.
3. Vous allez voir un malade? (*or* Allez-vous *etc.*, *or* Est-ce que vous allez, *etc.*)
4. Vous avez raison.
5. Nous irons ensemble tout de suite.
6. Je n'ai jamais rien dit contre vous.
7. Il ne sait pas lire.
8. Elle n'a rien vu.
9. J'ai tout vu.
10. Tout de suite je vous dirai le reste.
11. Je l'écoutais.
12. Les soldats sont arrivés au soir.
13. Je le connais bien.
14. Ne parlez plus de tout cela.
15. Je vous ai dit ce que je pense.
16. Je n'en parlerai plus.
17. Faites-le boire.
18. Je me sens mieux.
19. Monsieur le sait bien.
20. Je ne l'ai jamais vu.
21. Il ne répond jamais à nos lettres.
22. Qu'est-ce qu'il veut dire?
23. Nous parlerons de cela plus tard.
24. Ces messieurs sont venus tous les jours.
25. Il y a un moyen de le savoir.
26. Il était déjà venu ce matin.

27. Vous n'avez rien à faire.
28. On n'est jamais plus heureux qu'à ton âge, garçon. (Use votre instead of ton, unless speaking very intimately.)
29. Vous êtes chez des amis.
30. Je n'ai plus ni père ni mère.
31. Vous êtes encore malade.
32. Nous ne sommes pas les plus forts.
33. Ils seront ici ce soir.
34. Je n'en sais rien.
35. Entrons, nous finirons cela plus tard.
36. Où allez-vous?
37. Je n'en sais rien encore.
38. Je vois un petit garçon de dix ans.
39. Ses yeux sont grands et noirs.
40. Allez dire à madame que je suis fatigué(e).
41. Il mangeait peu, buvait encore moins, et ne parlait pas du tout.
42. Nous sommes tous frères.
43. Je vais vous dire ce que je ne vous ai pas dit tout à l'heure à table.
44. Il est venu voir ma sœur.
45. Vous n'étiez qu'un enfant.
46. J'ai entendu dire ce que vous avez fait pour cette pauvre mère et pour cette pauvre jeune fille.

(Read these aloud until you are familiar with them, and can give them orally from English in Lesson 39 rapidly.)

Exercise in Lesson 40

1. Tout le monde sortit.
2. Elle ne répondit pas.
3. J'ouvris une fenêtre.
4. Nous y arrivâmes.
5. Cela nous fit rire.
6. J'en vis trois.
7. Nous montâmes dans nos chambres.
8. Je n'en compris rien.
9. On fit venir les soldats.
10. J'en parlai avec respect.
11. Deux hommes sortirent de la maison.
12. Nous fûmes bientôt en bas.
13. J'allai voir.
14. Il le prit par le bras.
15. Il le mit dehors.
16. Je vis qu'elle était venue.
17. Il alla dans la cuisine.
18. On entra dans le village.
19. Nous y arrivâmes vers six heures.
20. La pauvre femme voulut aller chez elle.

Exercise in Lesson 41

(1) **ces:** demonstrative adj., masc., plur., modifies **morts.**
laquelle: relative pro., fem., sing., agrees with (la) **lettre** in gender and number, object of prep. **de,** phrase modifies **l'enveloppe.**
celui: demonstrative pro., masc., sing., subject of **voudra.**
qui: relative pro., does not change for gender and number; has antecedent **celui;** subject of **trouvera.**
cette: demonstrative adj., fem., sing., to agree with word it modifies, **lettre.**
ma: possessive adj., fem., sing., to agree with word it modifies, **tombe.**

(2) **dont:** relative pronoun; does not change in form to show gender or number; means *of which.*

(3) **ceux:** demonstrative pro., masc., plur.
qui: relative pro., antecedent **ceux;** subject of **donnent.**
lui: personal pro., sing., indirect obj. of **donnent.**

(4) **qui:** relative pro., object of prep. **avec.**

(5) **en:** **en** is used regularly after numerals (trente-deux), meaning *of them.*

(6) **cela:** demonstrative pronoun which is convenient because **it** does not change in form to show gender and number.

(7) **dont:** relative pro., modifies **besoin.**

Exercise in Lesson 49

1. Je vais faire un voyage.
2. Je vais à la gare.
3. Avez-vous beaucoup de bagages?
4. Non, je n'en ai pas beaucoup.
5. Avez-vous une malle?
6. Oui, j'en ai deux.
7. Il faut les enregistrer.
8. Voulez-vous enregistrer vos colis?
9. Non, je les porterai à la main.
10. Est-ce que vous avez votre billet?
11. Non, je ne l'ai pas encore.
12. Prenez le billet à l'homme qui est là, au guichet.
13. Allons à la voiture.
14. Vous allez monter dans la voiture avec moi, n'est-ce pas?

VERB LISTS

Synopsis of Lesson 50

aller, first pers. sing.	**voir**, third pers. sing.	**avoir**, first pers. pl.
je vais	il voit	nous avons
j'allais	il voyait	nous avions
j'irai	il verra	nous aurons
je suis **allé**	il a **vu**	nous avons eu
j'étais **allé**	il avait **vu**	nous avions eu
j'allai	il vit	nous eûmes
j'irais	il verrait	nous aurions
je serais **allé**	il aurait **vu**	nous aurions eu
que j'aille	qu'il voie	que nous ayons
que j'allasse	qu'il vît	que nous eussions
que je sois allé	qu'il ait vu	que nous ayons eu
que je fusse allé	qu'il eût vu	que nous eussions eu

être, second pers. plural	**venir**, third pers. plural
vous êtes	ils viennent
vous étiez	ils venaient
vous serez	ils viendront
vous avez été	ils sont venus
vous aviez été	ils étaient venus
vous fûtes	ils vinrent
vous seriez	ils viendraient
vous auriez été	ils seraient venus
que vous soyez	qu'ils viennent
que vous fussions	qu'ils vinssent
que vous ayez été	qu'ils soient venus
que vous eussiez été	qu'ils fussent venus

First Verb List (Lesson 50)

1.	avoir	9.	ayant	17.	ils seraient
2.	elle n'a pas	10.	être	18.	nous fûmes
3.	il a eu	11.	nous serons	19.	j'aurais
4.	ils sont	12.	nous avons	20.	ils avaient été
5.	nous avions été	13.	nous avions	21.	on avait
6.	qu'il ait	14.	avoir été	22.	vous fûtes
7.	il sera	15.	je serais	23.	j'avais
8.	on est	16.	ayant eu	24.	j'ai eu

25. j'eus
26. on a
27. étant
28. vous êtes
29. j'aurai
30. qu'on soit
31. on sera
32. il aura
33. ayant été
34. soyons
35. avoir eu
36. qu'ils soient
37. ayez
38. il était
39. il a été
40. il fut
41. nous sommes
42. ayons
43. je serai
44. elles ont eu
45. que je fusse

Second Verb List (Lesson 51)

1. battant
2. se battant
3. ils battent
4. ils se battent
5. battu
6. nous battîmes
7. il courra
8. elle a couvert
9. il doit
10. il devait
11. il a dû
12. il dut
13. ils couraient
14. j'enverrai
15. il couvrit
16. il couvre
17. il envoya
18. il court
19. ils avaient mu
20. offrant
21. ayant couru
22. paraissant
23. nous mûmes
24. paru
25. je courus
26. ils paraîtront
27. il offrira
28. plaisant
29. ils mouvaient
30. ils mouvraient
31. ils mouvront
32. rompez!
33. nous avons paru
34. nous envoyâmes
35. il rompt
36. ils parurent
37. plu
38. il plut
39. ayant offert
40. il souffrira
41. ils souffrent
42. j'offris
43. elle a souffert
44. ils ont reconnu
45. il reconnut

Lesson 52

1. Allons nous coucher
2. Nous montâmes dans nos chambres.
3. Je me couchai
4. Je me levai
5. J'ouvris une fenêtre.
6. En m'habillant, j'avais froid
7. Je m'habillai bien vite.
8. Qu'est-ce que c'est?
9. Ils ont raison.
10. Il se leva.
11. Nous avons tous dormi.
12. Vous avez été malade.
13. Tout va bien.
14. Tout ira mieux.
15. Écoutez bien.

Third Verb List (Lesson 52)

1. allant
2. étant allé
3. ayant eu
4. se battant
5. s'étant battu
6. buvant
7. ayant bu
8. comprenant
9. il a compris

10. conduisant
11. ils ont conduit
12. connaissant
13. sachant
14. ayant connu
15. ayant su
16. nous avons cons-
17. il a vécu truit
18. couvert
19. craignant
20. craint
21. croyant
22. il a cru
23. devant
24. il a dû
25. disant
26. vous aviez dit
27. voyant
28. écrivant
29. faisant
30. ils ont lu
31. ayant mis
32. mourant
33. mort
34. il a paru
35. il a pu
36. il a pris

Lesson 53

1. Je le connais bien.
2. Comment s'appele cet homme?
3. Je vous en prie, ne parlez plus de tout cela.
4. Je n'en parlerai plus.
5. Ne craignez rien. Vous êtes chez des amis.
6. Moi, je sortis déjeuner dans la cuisine.
7. A quoi pensez-vous donc?
8. Faites-nous donc le plaisir de venir prendre le café avec nous.

Fourth Verb List (Lesson 53)

1. je vins
2. on eut
3. j'allai
4. il prit
5. il sut
6. je vis
7. il fit
8. il conduisit
9. il vint
10. vous eûtes
11. il alla
12. nous prîmes
13. ils virent
14. nous ecrivîmes
15. il envoya
16. nous vînmes
17. il fut
18. ils prirent
19. nous sûmes
20. il fallut
21. vous vîntes
22. ils lurent
23. ils envoyèrent
24. je pus
25. je voulus
26. ils parurent
27. nous fîmes
28. ils craignirent
29. il crut
30. il dut
31. ils vinrent
32. vous allâtes
33. il put
34. nous vîmes
35. vous fîtes
36. nous fûmes
37. ils allèrent
38. nous pûmes
39. ils surent
40. nous dîmes
41. ils dormirent
42. ils furent
43. je sus
44. nous voulûmes
45. ils firent

Lesson 54

1. A qui la faute?
2. Comment va madame votre mère?

3. Nous irons ensemble tout de suite.
4. Je vais rester absent jusqu'au soir.
5. Il pouvait avoir cinquante ans.
6. Qu'est-ce que vous faites cette après-midi?
7. Je ne sais pas; j'irai me promener avec vous.
8. J'arrive de B.... . Tout va bien là-bas.
9. Je vous dirai le reste tout à l'heure.
10. Tout le monde était là.

Fifth Verb List (Lesson 54)

1.	6.	11.
nous allions	nous croyions	nous faisions
nous sommes allés	nous avons cru	nous avons fait
nous allâmes	nous crûmes	nous fîmes
2.	7.	12.
nous avions	nous devions	nous paraissions
nous avons eu	nous avons dû	nous avons paru
nous eûmes	nous dûmes	nous parûmes
3.	8.	13.
nous nous battions	nous disions	nous prenions
nous nous sommes battus	nous avons dit	nous avons pris
nous nous battîmes	nous dîmes	nous prîmes
4.	9.	4.
nous connaissions	nous écrivions	nous rompions
nous avons connu	nous avons écrit	nous avons rompu
nous connûmes	nous écrivîmes	nous rompîmes
5.	10.	15.
nous craignions	nous envoyions	nous tenions
nous avons craint	nous avons envoyé	nous avons tenu
nous craignîmes	nous envoyâmes	nous tînmes

Sixth Verb List (Lesson 55)

1. je voudrais	7. elle rira	13. voudriez-vous
2. il vivra	8. ils rompront	14. il vivrait
3. je verrai	9. ils mettraient	15. je viendrai
4. il viendra	10. je tiendrai	16. il plairait
5. il vaudra	11. il suivra	17. il prendra
6. nous suivrons	12. je pourrai	18. il voudra

19. il faudra
20. ils rompraient
21. nous lirons
22. il tiendra
23. il faudrait
24. il verra
25. nous viendrions
26. il enverra
27. il suivrait
28. elle sera
29. il tiendrait
30. il paraîtra
31. il mourra
32. nous verrons
33. il fera
34. elle souffrira
35. je saurai
36. ils viendraient
37. il saurait
38. il souffrirait
39. il mourrait
40. il rirait
41. ils feront
42. nous dirons
43. il écrirait
44. ils craindraient
45. je courrai

Seventh Verb List (Lesson 56)

1. il va
2. ils ont
3. nous buvons
4. ils conduisent
5. il couvre
6. ils croient
7. nous allons
8. ils boivent
9. il craint
10. croyez-vous
11. dites!
12. ils disent
13. j'envoie
14. ils écrivent
15. allez-vous
16. faites!
17. il met
18. ils craignent
19. il meurt
20. je meus
21. il paraît
22. ils font
23. il pleut
24. il lit
25. ils lisent
26. je peux
27. puis-je
28. ils meuvent
29. ils peuvent
30. ils paraissent
31. il prend
32. ils connaissent
33. ils savent
34. nous faisons
35. ils vont
36. je ris
37. il rompt
38. ils mettent
39. savez-vous
40. il souffre
41. il suit
42. je tiens
43. ils viennent
44. ils tiennent
45. venez!

Eighth Verb List (Lesson 57)

1. qu'il ait
2. qu'il eût
3. que je puisse
4. qu'ils voient
5. que je veuille
6. que je sois
7. que je fusse
8. qu'il aille
9. que je sache
10. qu'il veuille
11. que je fasse
12. que je me lave
13. qu'on soit
14. que je voie
15. qu'ils viennent
16. que je vienne
17. que nous voulions
18. que nous prenions
19. qu'ils sachent
20. qu'ils se lavent
21. que j'aie
22. que j'eusse
23. qu'ils veuillent
24. qu'il prenne
25. qu'il suive
26. qu'ils soient
27. qu'ils fussent
28. qu'il fasse
29. qu'ils puissent
30. qu'il tint

Ninth Verb List

1. ils ne se battent pas
2. il ne courra jamais
3. j'en enverrai deux
4. nous ne mûmes rien
5. il ne souffrira plus
6. ils ne paraîtront jamais
7. je n'en ai pas eu
8. nous n'y sommes pas
9. je n'en aurai rien
10. que je fusse heureux
11. il n'a pas pu
12. il n'en a rien pris
13. ils n'y allèrent pas
14. personne ne l'a cru
15. il n'en a rien compris
16. ils m'y ont conduit
17. ne craignant rien
18. ils ne virent personne
19. vous ne vîntes jamais
20. il n'a pas vécu longtemps
21. nous ne lui écrivîmes pas
22. il n'y alla jamais
23. nous n'en avons rien eu
24. nous l'avons connu
25. nous vous avons écrit
26. nous le lui avons envoyé
27. je le verrai demain
28. nous les lirons tout de suite
29. il ne saurait pas
30. il en prendra dix

Tenth Verb List

1. Est-ce que vous êtes malade?
2. Est-ce qu'elle y sera demain?
3. Est-ce que vous me direz le nom?
4. Est-ce qu'il m'enverra l'argent?
5. Est-ce qu'il viendrait?
6. Est-ce qu'elle souffrirait beaucoup?
7. Est-ce que les enfants le rompîrent?
8. Est-ce que vous ne lui avez pas écrit?
9. Est-ce que vous allez rester?
10. Est-ce que vous vous promenerez avec moi?
11. Quand arrive-t-on à Paris?
12. A qui est la maison?
13. Combien d'enfants avait-il?
14. Comment arrivez-vous?
15. A quelle heure part le train?
16. Comprenez-vous le français?
17. Devrai-je voir votre père?
18. Le train, partira-t-il dans dix minutes?
19. Pourriez-vous me donner de l'argent?
20. A-t-il beaucoup d'enfants?

FRENCH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

For the meaning of signs before words see key at the beginning of List or Irregular Verbs.

Words alike in French and English are not listed here.

A

a has; *see* **avoir**
à to, at, in, for, by, *etc.*
abattre to bring down
abbé *m.* priest
abondant -e abundant
abri *m.* retreat, dugout
absolu -e absolute, complete
accepter to accept
†**accompagner** to attend, accompany
acheter [il achète] to buy
achever [il achève] to finish
acte *m.* act; document
acti-f -ve active
activité *f.* activity
adieu (*pl.* **adieux**) *m.* farewell
adorable dear
adverbe *m.* adverb
affaire *f.* thing, affair; *pl.* business
afin que in order that, to, so as to
affreu-x -se frightful
âge *m.* age
âgé -e old
agir to act; **s'agir de** to be a question of
agréable agreeable
†**ailleurs** elsewhere; **d'ailleurs** besides
aimable lovable, amiable
ainsi so, thus
ajouter to add
aller to go; **s'en aller** to go away
allez-vous-en oh, go on! nonsense!
allumette *f.* match
alors then
Américain *m.* American (U.S.)
Américaine *f.* American woman
Amérique *f.* The United States
ami *m.* friend
amie *f.* friend
amour *m.* love
amuser to amuse; **s'amuser** to have a good time, enjoy oneself
an *m.* year
année *f.* year
août *m.* August
†**appareil** *m.* machine, apparatus

appeler [il appelle] to call; **s'appeler** to be named
apport *m.* contribution
apporter to bring
appuyé -e resting
après after
après-demain day after to-morrow
après-midi *m.* afternoon
arbre *m.* tree
ardent -e eager, enthusiastic
argent *m.* silver; money
arrêter *and* **s'arrêter** to stop
arriver to arrive; happen
arrondissement *m.* municipal district
†**artillerie** *f.* artillery
assassiner to kill
asseoir to seat; **s'asseoir** to take a seat
assez enough
assis -e seated; *see* **asseoir**
association *f.* partnership
associer to associate; **s'associer** to become partners
attaque *f.* attack
atteindre to reach
attendre to wait; await
attente *f.* waiting; **salle d'attente** waiting room
au *contraction for* **à le**
aucun -e any; anybody
aujourd'hui today
auparavant first
au revoir goodby!
autant (que) as much (as); as many (as)
auteur *m.* author
automobile *m. or f.* automobile
autour *or* **autour de** around
autre other
aux *contraction for* **à les**
auxiliaire auxiliary
avance *m.* advance; **en avance** ahead of time
avancer [*use* **ç** *before* **a** *or* **o**] to advance
avant (de) before
avec with
avenir *m.* future
avoir to have
avril *m.* April
ayant having; *see* **avoir**

B

bain *m.* bath
banc *m.* bench
barbe *f.* beard
barrière *f.* fence
bâton *m.* staff, club, stick
battre to beat; **se battre** to fight
beau bel belle beautiful
beaucoup (de) much, many
bébé *m. or f.* baby
bénédictine *f.* Benedictine cordial
béni -e blessed
besoin *m.* need
bête *f.* beast
beurre *m.* butter
bien well; perhaps, to be sure
bientôt soon
†**billet** *m.* ticket; note
blesser to wound
bleu -e blue
boche *adj.* German
Boche *m.* German
bœuf *m.* ox; beef
boire to drink

bois *m.* wood, forest
bon -ne good
bonbon *m.* candy
bonjour good day
bonsoir good evening
bonté *f.* goodness
bouche *f.* mouth
boue *f.* mud
bousculer to shove along, jostle
bout *m.* end
boyau (*pl.* **boyaux**) communication trench
bras *m.* arm
brave good, worthy, brave, game
bravoure *f.* bravery
brigade *m.* brigade
britannique British
brusquement abruptly, shortly
brutal -e brutal
bureau (*pl.* **bureaux**) office
bus drank; *see* **boire**
butin *m.* plunder

C

c' *abbreviation for* **ce**
ça this, that, it
cadavre *m.* body, corpse
café *m.* coffee
calme *m.* quiet; *adj.* calm
†**campagne** *f.* country; **à la campagne** to *or* in the country
canard *m.* duck
canif *m.* knife
canon *m.* cannon, gun
cantonnement *m.* cantonment
capturé -e captured
carnet *m.* notebook, diary
carte *f.* card, map; ticket
casé -e settled
causer to talk; cause
ce cet cette ces this, that
ceci this....here
cela that....there
cellule *f.* cell, protoplasm
celui celle ceux celles he, the one
celui-ci celle-ci ceux-ci celles-ci this one
celui-là celle-là ceux-là celles-là that one
certain -e certain
certainement certainly
cet(te) *see* **ce**
chaise *f.* chair
chambre *f.* room, bedroom
champ *m.* field
chapeau (*pl.* **chapeaux**) *m.* hat
chargé -e loaded
charnier *m.* slaughter house, morgue
château (*pl.* **châteaux**) country house, manor house
chaud -e warm, hot; **avoir chaud** to be warm
chef *m.* chief
chemin *m.* road; **chemin de fer** railroad
cheminée *f.* chimney, fireplace
cher chère dear
chercher to seek, hunt for
cheveu (*pl.* **cheveux**) hair; **les cheveux** the hair
chez to *or* at the house, home, *or* office of
chocolat *m.* chocolate
chose *f.* thing
cigare *m.* cigar
cinéma *m.* movie show
cinq five
clair -e clear

clef [*pronounce* **clé**] *f.* key
cœur *m.* heart
coin *m.* corner
colis *m.* handbag
colonie *f.* colony
combat *m.* battle, fight
combattre to fight
combien (de) how much, how many
commander to command
comme how, as; while
commencer [**ç** *before* **a** *or* **o**] to begin
comment how
commerçant *m.* business man
commun -e common
communiqué *m.* report, bulletin
communiquer to communicate
complaire to please
compléter [il complète, *etc.*] to finish
comprendre to understand
compris *see* comprendre
compte [*pronounce* conte] *m.* number, count
compter [*pronounce* con-ter] to count
conduire to lead, conduct, take
confortable comfortable
conjuguer to conjugate
connais *see* **connaître**
connaître to be acquainted with, know
connus *see* **connaître**
conquérir to conquer
conscience *f.* consciousness
consister (en) to consist (of)
constituer to establish; **se constituer** to be established
construire to construct
contenir to contain
content -e pleased, happy
contenter to content
continuer to keep on
contraire opposite; **au contraire** on the contrary
contrairement contrariwise, vice versa
contre against
contre-attaque *f.* counter-attack
corps [*pronounce* core] *m.* body
cou *m.* neck
coucher to lay down; **se coucher** to go to bed, retire
coude *m.* elbow
coup *m.* stroke; **coup de main** violent attack
courir to run
cours *m.* course; **au cours de** in the course of, during
cousin *m.* cousin
cousine *f.* cousin
coûter to cost
couvert -e covered; *m.* place (knife, fork, spoon, napkin)
couverture *f.* blanket
couvrir to cover
†craign(a)is *see* **craindre**
craindre to fear
crayon *m.* pencil
crier to scream, shout
croire (à) to think (of)
crus *see* **croire**
cte *abbreviation for* **compte** count
cuisine *f.* kitchen
cuisinier *m.* cook
curé *m.* priest
curieu-x -se curious

D

dans in, into
davantage more
de of, from, by, with, *etc.*
déballer to unpack
débarrasser to rid, clear
déborder to overflow
debout standing
décembre *m.* December
déclarer to declare
découvrir to discover, uncover
décrire to describe
défendre to defend
dégeler (il dégèle) to thaw
dehors outside, out, out doors
déjà already
déjeuner to breakfast; *m.* breakfast
demain tomorrow
demande *f.* request
demander to ask, request
demi *m.* half
demi -e half
demi-heure *f.* half hour
demi-tasse *f.* small cup
dent *m.* tooth
départ *m.* getting away; departure
dépêcher to hurry; **se dépêcher** to hurry
dépense *f.* expense
depuis since, for
dernier dernière last
derrière behind, back
des *contraction for* de les of the, *etc.*
désagréable, disagreeable
désirer to wish
désormais from now on, for a long time
dessert *m.* dessert
†deuil *m.* grief
deux two
devant before
devenir to become
devoir ought, should
dicter to dictate
différent -e different
†digne worthy
dimanche *m.* Sunday
dîner to dine; *m.* dinner
dire to say
directement directly
disant *see* **dire**
discours *m.* speech
distingué -e distinguished
dix ten
docteur *m.* doctor, physician
doigt *m.* finger; **doigt du pied** toe
dommage *m.* damage; too bad
donner to give
dont of whom, of which
doré -e gilded
dormir to sleep
doucement gently
douter to doubt
douze twelve
droit -e right; **à droite** at *or* to the right
drôle funny, comic
dû *see* **devoir**
du *contraction for* de le of the; **du tout** at all
dus *see* devoir

E

eau *f.* water
éclairer to lighten
école *f.* school
écouter to listen (to)
s'écrier to cry out; exclaim
écrire to write
égal -e equal
église *f.* church
eh bien very well
élancer [ç *before* **a** *or* **o**] to hurl; **s'élancer** to be hurled
électrique electric
élève *m.* student
élever [il élève] to raise; cultivate
elle it, she
s'embarquer to embark, start
s'emparer de to get possession of
empêcher to prevent
en in, into, to, *etc.*
en of it, from it
encore yet, already
encre *m.* ink
enfant *m. or f.* child
enfin finally, at last, after all
enlever [il enlève] to go aboard, board
ennemi -e hostile, enemy; *m.* enemy
enregistrer to check
ensemble together
entendre to hear, listen to
enterrer to bury
entraîné -e trained
entre between, among
entrée *f.* entrance, entry
entrer to enter
entrée *f.* entrance, entry
entrer to enter
environ about; *m.* vicinity (*often plural*)
envoyer [il envoie] to send
équilibre *m.* poise
†**espagnol -e** Spanish
espérer [il espère] to hope
est *m.* east
est *see* **être**
estimer to value, estimate
estomac *m.* stomach
et and
état *m.* state
États-Unis United States
être to be
étudier to study
étymologie *f.* derivation
eu *see* **avoir**
eus *see* **avoir**
eux they, them
évident -e plain, obvious
éviter to avoid
exact -e exact
exactement exactly
examiner to inspect
exemple *m.* example
expliquer to explain
explorer to explore
exprimer to express
extérieur -e superficial

F

fâcher to vex; **se fâcher** to be vexed
facilement easily
facteur *m.* carrier, porter, "red cap"

faiblesse *f.* weakness
†**faillir** to fail
faim *f.* hunger; **avoir faim** to be hungry
faire to make, do; **se faire** to be managed
falloir to be necessary; **s'en falloir** to lack
fallut *see* **falloir**
fameu-x -se famous
†**famille** *f.* family
fantôme *m.* ghost
fasse *see* **faire**
fatigué -e tired
faut *see* **falloir**
faute *f.* fault
faux fausse false
femme *f.* woman, wife
fenêtre *f.* window
fer *m.* iron
ferme *f.* farm; *adv.* sturdily
fermer to close
février *m.* February
fiacre *m.* carriage
fier fière proud
Figaro *m.* Figaro (a periodical)
fil *m.* thread; **fil de fer** wire
†**fille** *f.* daughter; girl
fils [*pronounce* **feess**] *m.* son
fin *f.* end; **à la fin** finally
finir to finish
fis *see* **faire**
flatter to flatter
flèche *f.* arrow
fleur *f.* flower
fois *f.* time
fond *m.* bottom; back (of the stage)
fonds *m.* business; stock
force *f.* force, strength
former to form
fort -e strong; very
fournir to furnish; afford
frais fraîche fresh
franc *m.* franc (20 cents)
français -e French
Français *m.* Frenchman
français *m.* French language
frapper to strike, knock
frère *m.* brother
frissonner to shudder
froid -e cold; **avoir froid** to be cold; **faire froid** to be cold
fromage *m.* cheese
fumer to smoke
funèbre funeral
fus *see* **être**
†**fusil** *m.* gun
†**fusiller** to shoot

G

gaieté *f.* good nature
†**gaillardement** gayly
gaiment gayly
galoper to gallop
garage *m.* sidetrack; garage
garçon *m.* boy; waiter
garde *f.* guard
garder to guard
gare *f.* station
gauche left; **à gauche** to *or* **at** the left
geler [il gèle] to freeze
général (*pl.* **généraux**) general
genou (*pl.* **genoux**) *m.* knee
gens *m. pl.* people
gentil -le polite, kind
gigot *m.* leg of mutton
glace *f.* ice

goûter to taste
grammaire *f.* grammar
grand -e large, tall
grand'mère *f.* grandmother
grand-père *m.* grandfather
gravement gravely
grêler to hail
grenadier *m.* grenadier
†grognard *m.* grumbler, grouch
gros -se large, fat
guerre *f.* war
guichet *m.* ticket window
†Guillaume *m.* William

H

In words marked ' initial h is to be sounded. It is silent in all others.

†habiller to dress
haricot *m.* bean
'haut -e high
'hauteur *f.* height, summit
heure *f.* hour
heureu-x -se happy
hier yesterday
hirsute* shaggy
homme *m.* man
'honi evil, bad luck
hôpital *m.* hospital
horrible terrible
'hors d'œuvre *m.* between courses
hôtel *m.* hotel
huit eight
humain -e human

I

ici here
il it, he; there
importer to make a difference
indication *f.* location
indiquer to point out
inexpérimenté -e untried
infiniment infinitely, much
inoffensi-f -ve harmless
inspecter to examine
instruction *f.* drill, training
intellectuel -le intellectual
intéressant -e interesting
intimement intimately
iriez you would go, *see* aller
irrésistible irresistible

J

jamais ever; ne.... jamais never
jambe *f.* leg
jambon *m.* ham
janvier *m.* January
jardin *m.* garden
je I
Jean *m.* John
jeter [il jette] to throw
jeudi *m.* Thursday
jeune young
jeunesse *f.* youth
joie *f.* joy
joli -e pretty
jouer to play
jour *m.* day; tous les jours every day
journal *m.* journal, diary; paper
journée *f.* day
†juillet *m.* July
juin *m.* June
jus *m.* gravy, sauce; juice
jusque up to, as far as
juste right

K

kilomètre *m.* kilometer (three fifths of a mile)

L

la *see* le
là there, here
laborieu-x -se hard
là-haut up there, over there
laisser to allow; have (a thing done)
lait *m.* milk
lamentable pitiful, pitiable, pathetic
lampe *f.* lamp
langue *f.* tongue
laquelle *see* lequel
large broad
le la les the; it, him, her
leçon *f.* lesson
légume *m.* vegetable
lendemain the next day
lequel laquelle lesquels lesquelles who, which
les *see* le
lesquels *see* lequel
lettre *f.* letter
leur leurs their
lever [il lève] to raise; se lever to get up, rise
lèvre *f.* lip
lieu *m.* place; avoir lieu to take place
†ligne *f.* line
lire to read
lisière *f.* thicket
lit *m.* bed; *see* lire reads
littéralement literally
livre *m.* book
l'on *the same as* on, *see* on
†lorgnette *f.* spy glass
lorsque when
lui to *or* for it, him, her
lui-même himself, herself, itself
lundi *m.* Monday
lus *see* lire
lyre *f.* lyre; gamut, range

M

ma *see* mon
madame *f.* madam, Mrs.
mademoiselle *f.* miss
magasin *m.* storehouse, magazine
†magnifique magnificent
mai *m.* May
main *f.* hand
maintenant now
maintenir to maintain
mais but
maison *f.* house; à la maison at home
maître *m.* master
mal badly
malade ill, sick
malgré in spite of
malheureu-x -se unhappy
malicieusement mischievously
malle *f.* trunk
manche *f.* sleeve
manger [nous mangeons] to eat
manteau *m.* wrap
marchande *f.* seller
marche *f.* march
marcher to march
mardi *m.* Tuesday
maréchal *m.* marshal

mari *m.* husband
marquise *f.* marchioness
mars [*pronounce* marss] *m.* March
matériel -le material, important
matin *m.* morning
Matin *m.* Matin (a Paris daily)
maturité *f.* maturity
me me
mèche *f.* wick
†**médaille** *f.* medal
†**meilleur -e** better, best
mélange *m.* mixture
même same, -self; even; **tout de même** all the same
menton *m.* chin
menu *m.* menu, bill of fare
merci thank you
mercredi *m.* Wednesday
mère *f.* mother
mes *see* **mon**
messe *f.* mass
messieurs *plural of* **monsieur**
met *see* **mettre**
mettre to put, place
meuble *m.* furniture
midi *m.* noon
mieux better, best
militaire military
mille thousand
minuit *m.* midnight
minute *f.* minute
mis *see* **mettre**
misère *f.* misery, hardship
moderne modern
moi I, me
moi-même myself
moins less; **du moins** at least
mois *m.* month
mon ma mes my
monde *m.* world; **tout le monde** everybody
monsieur *m.* gentleman, Mr.
monter to mount, climb; **monter dans** to get into
montrer to show
morceau *m.* morsel, piece
mort *m.* dead man; *pl.* dead
mort -e dead
mot *m.* word
mourir to die
mouvement *m.* motion, movement; climax
mouvoir to move
moyen *m.* means
musique *f.* band; music

N

ne not; **ne...pas** not; **ne...que** only
neige *f.* snow
neiger to snow
neuf nine
nez *m.* nose
ni neither; **ni...ni** neither...nor
nom *m.* name
nombreu-x -se numerous
nommer to name; **se nommer** to be called
non no; not
noir -e black
nos our; *see* **notre**
notre our
nôtre ours
nouveau nouvel nouvelle new
nous we, us
nouvelle *see* **nouveau**
novembre *m.* November
noyer to drown

O

obscur -e dark; **faire obscur** to grow dark
obtenir to get
octobre October
†œil (*pl.* **yeux**) *m.* eye
officiel -le official, authorized
offrir to offer
on one, "you", they, people
oncle *m.* uncle
onze eleven
oratoire oratorical
†oreille *f.* ear
où where
ou or
ouest *m.* west
oui yes
outil *m.* tool
ouvert -e open
ouvrir to open

P

pain *m.* bread
pâle pale
panama *m.* panama hat
papier *m.* paper
par by
paraître to seem, appear
parapluie *f.* umbrella
parcourir to traverse, run through
par-dessus above
pardon *m.* pardon
pardonner to pardon
parler to speak
parole *f.* word
part *f.* share; **à part** aside
partager [nous partageons] to share
partir to leave, depart
partout everywhere
pas *m.* step; **ne...pas** not; **pas du tout** not at all
passé *m.* past
passer to pass
patrie *f.* native land
†patrouille *f.* patrol
pauvre poor
pays *m.* country
peau *m.* skin
peine *f.* difficulty
pendant during
pénible painful
pensée *f.* thought
penser (à) to think (of)
pensionnat *m.* boarding school
père *m.* father
personne *f.* person
persuader to persuade
peser [il pèse] to weigh
petit -e small
peu (de) little, few; **un peu** a little
peut *see* **pouvoir**
peux *see* **pouvoir**
photographie *f.* photograph
physique bodily
pièce *f.* piece; room
pied *m.* foot
pipe *f.* pipe
placer [nous plaçons] to place
plaire (à) to please
plaisir *m.* pleasure
plaît *see* **plaire**
planter to plant
pleuvoir to rain

plume *f.* pen; feather
plus *see* **plaire**
plus more; **de plus** besides
plut *see* **pleuvoir**
poche *f.* pocket
poil *m.* hair; **à poil** hair
poilu *m.* French soldier
pois *m.* pea
poisson *m.* fish
poitrine *f.* breast, chest
pomme *f.* apple; **pomme de terre** potato
porte *f.* door
porter to carry; wear; **se porter** to be (*in health*)
portrait *m.* picture
possédé -e possessed
poste *m.* post, station
potage *m.* soup
poulet *m.* chicken
pour for; in order to, to
pourquoi why
pourriez *see* **pouvoir**
pousser to push
pouvoir to be able, can
précéder [il précède] to go before
précepteur *m.* teacher
précis -e sharp, prompt, exact
prédécesseur *m.* predecessor
premier première first; **première** first class ticket
prendre to take
près (**de**) near, nearly
présent -e present; **à présent** now
presque almost
presser to hurry
pression *f.* pressure
prétendre to claim
prêter to lend
prêtre *m.* priest
primiti-f -ve primitive
pris *see* **prendre**
prix *m.* prize, price, value
progrès *m.* (*often pl.*) progress
progression *f.* progress
promener [il promène] to put forward; **se promener** to stroll, take a walk
promettre to promise
propre neat, clean; own
Prusse *f.* Prussia
puis then

Q

qu' *see* **que**
quand when
quart *m.* quarter
quatre four
que whom, which; **than**; when, as
quel quelle quels quelles which, what
quelque some
quelquefois sometimes
quelqu'un quelqu'une quelques-uns quelques-unes some one
qui which, who
quitter to leave
quinze fifteen
quoi what
quoique although

R

radieu-x -se delighted
raison *f.* reason

rappeler [il rappelle] to recall
rasé -e shaved, shaven
†ravitaillement *m.* provisioning, feeding
rayonnement *m.* radiance
rayonner to beam
réaliser to gain, get; make
recevoir to receive
réciproque reciprocal
reçoit *see* **recevoir**
récompense *f.* reward
reconnaître to recognize
†recueillir to collect
refuser to refuse
regarder to look, look at
régiment *m.* regiment
regretter to regret
régulier régulière regular
rejoindre to rejoin
remercier to thank
remettre to put back
remonter to raise
remporter to win
rendre to give back, perform
rentrer to return
renvoyer [il renvoie] to send back
répandre to disseminate, scatter, become known
répéter to repeat
répit *m.* respite, rest
répondre to reply
repos *m.* rest
repousser to push back
reprendre to resume
représenter to represent
reproche *f.* reproach
reprocher to reproach
respect *m.* respect
restaurant *m.* restaurant
reste *m.* remainder
rester to remain
résultat *m.* result
retirer to retire; **se retirer** to withdraw
retour *m.* return
retourner *and* **se retourner** to return
retrousser to push back
retrouver to find again
réunir to reunite; **se réunir** to meet
réussi -e successful
réussir to succeed
†réveiller to wake
revenir to return
rêve *m.* dream
rêver to dream
rez-de-chaussée *m.* ground floor
riche rich
rien *m.* anything; **ne...rien** nothing
rire to laugh
rire *m.* laugh
risque *m.* risk
risquer to risk, run the risk
rompre to break
rond -e round
rosbif *m.* roast beef
rôti -e roast (ed)
rouge red
route *f.* road
ruine *f.* ruin

S

s' *used for* **se**
sa *see* **son**
sac *m.* sack; **sac de nuit** hand bag
sachant *see* **savoir**

salade *f.* salad
sale dirty
salle *f.* room; **salle à manger** dining room
salon *m.* drawing room
samedi *m.* Saturday
sang *m.* blood
sans without
santé *f.* health
sarcler to clear up
saurai *see* **savoir**
sauver to save; **se sauver** to run away
savoir to know
secret *m.* secret
sécurité *f.* security
sel *m.* salt
semaine *f.* week
sembler to seem
semer [il sème] to sow
sentinelle *f.* sentinel
sentir to feel, see, perceive
sept [*pronounce* sett] seven
septembre *m.* September
servante *f.* servant
servir to serve; **se servir de** to use
serviteur *m.* servant
ses *see* **son**
seul -e alone, only
seulement only
si if; yes (*in contradicting negatives*)
six [seess] six
sœur *f.* sister
soi itself, himself, herself, oneself
soif *f.* thirst; **avoir soif** to be thirsty
soin *m.* care
soir *m.* evening
sol *m.* ground, soil
soldat *m.* soldier
†**sommeil** *m.* sleep
son sa ses its, his, her
sont *see* **être**
songer [nous songeons] to care (for)
sorte *f.* kind, sort
sortir to go out, leave
souffrir to suffer
soupe *f.* soup
souper *m.* supper; to have supper
sourcil *m.* eyebrow
sous under
sous-lieutenant *m.* second lieutenant
sous-préfecture *f.* sub-district
soutenir to support, withstand
souvent often
stupide stupid
sucre *m.* sugar
sud *m.* south
suite *f.* following; **tout de suite** at once; **de suite** in turn
suivre to follow
sûmes *see* **savoir**
superbe superb
supérieur -e superior, better
sur on, upon, about
sûr -e sure
surpris -e surprised
surprise *f.* astonishment
surtout above all

T

ta *see* **ton**
tabac *m.* tobacco

tâche *f.* task
tâcher to try
taire to be silent
tant (de) so much, so many
tante *f.* aunt
tapis *m.* carpet
tard late
tasse *f.* cup
te *see* **tu**
téléphoner to telephone
tel -le such
temps *m.* time; weather
tendre tender
tenir to hold
terre *f.* earth, land
terminer to end
tes *see* **ton**
tête *f.* head
thé *m.* tea
timbre *m.* stamp
tins *see* **tenir**
tirer to draw; shoot
toi *see* **tu**
tolérable endurable
tombe *f.* tomb, grave
tomber to fall
ton ta tes your
tonner to thunder
tort *m.* wrong; **avoir tort** to be wrong
tôt soon
toujours always
tout toute tous toutes every, all; **tout de suite** at once
traduire to translate
train *m.* gait; train
trajet *m.* trip
tranchée *f.* trench
tranquillement quietly
tranquillité *f.* rest, quiet
†travail *m.* work
†travailler to work
très very
triste sad
trois three
trop too, too much
troupe *f.* troop
trouver to find
tu you
tuer to kill
tus *see* **taire**

U

un une a, an, one
usuel -le usual

V

valoir to be worth; **valoir mieux** to be better
vaste great
va-t-en run along!
veau *m.* veal
vécus *see* **vivre**
vendre to sell
venir to come
vent *m.* wind; **faire du vent** to be windy
verbe *m.* verb
véritable real, genuine
verre *m.* glass
vers toward, to
vert -e green
vêtir to dress, clothe
veux *see* **vouloir**
viande *f.* meat
victoire *f.* victory
vide empty

vie *f.* life
vient *see* **venir**
vieux †**vieil** †**vieille** old
vif vive vigorous
vigueur *f.* vigor
village *m.* village
vîmes *see* **voir**
vin *m.* wine
vins *see* **venir**
vis *see* **voir**
visiter to visit
vite quickly
vivre to live
voici here is, here are
voilà there is, there are
voir to see
voisinage *m.* neighborhood
voiture *f.* carriage, car, vehicle
voix *f.* voice
voler to rob; fly
vont *see* **aller**
vos *see* **votre**
votre vos your
vôtre yours
voulez *see* **vouloir**
vouloir to wish
vous you
voyage *m.* trip
voyageur *m.* traveler
voyait *see* **voir**
voyant *see* **voir**
vrai -e true

Y

y there; **il y a** there is, there are; **y a-t-il?** is there? are there?
yeux (*pl. of* **œil**) eyes

*Title	Style	Price

Electrical Books

Electrical Tables and Engineering Data	*Lea.	$1.50
Electrical Tables and Engineering Data	*Cloth	1.00
Motion Picture Operation	*Lea.	1.50
Motion Picture Operation	*Cloth	1.00
Alternating Current	Lea.	1.50
Alternating Current	Cloth	1.00
Wiring Diagrams and Descriptions	*Lea.	1.50
Wiring Diagrams and Descriptions	*Cloth	1.00
Armature and Magnet Winding	*Lea.	1.50
Armature and Magnet Winding	*Cloth	1.00
Modern Electric Illumination	*Lea.	1.50
Modern Electric Illumination	*Cloth	1.00
Modern Electrical Construction	*Lea.	1.50
Modern Electrical Construction	*Cloth	1.00
Electricians' Operating and Testing Manual	*Lea.	1.50
Electricians' Operating and Testing Manual	*Cloth	1.00
Drake's Electrical Dictionary	Lea.	1.50
Drake's Electrical Dictionary	Cloth	1.00
Electric Motors, Direct and Alternating	*Lea.	1.50
Electric Motors, Direct and Alternating	*Cloth	1.00
Electrical Measurements and Meter Testing	Lea.	1.50

NOTE.—New Books and Revised Editions are marked*

*Title	Style	Price

Electrical Books—Continued

Electrical Measurements and Meter Testing	Cloth	$1.00
Drake's Telephone Handbook	Lea.	1.50
Drake's Telephone Handbook	Cloth	1.00
Elementary Electricity, Up-to-Date	*Cloth	1.25
Electricity Made Simple	*Cloth	1.00
Easy Electrical Experiments	*Cloth	1.00
Wireless Telegraph and Telephone Handbook	Cloth	1.00
Telegraphy, Self-taught	Cloth	1.00
Dynamo-Electric Machines	Cloth	1.50
Electro-Plating Handbook	Lea.	1.50
Electro-Plating Handbook	Cloth	1.00
Modern American Telephony	Lea.	2.00
Handy Vest-Pocket Electrical Dictionary	Lea.	.50
Handy Vest-Pocket Electrical Dictionary	Cloth	.25
Storage Batteries	Cloth	.50
Elevators—Hydraulic and Electric	Cloth	1.00
How to Become a Successful Motorman	Lea.	1.50
Motorman's Practical Air Brake Instructor	Lea.	1.50
Electric Railway Troubles	Cloth	1.50
Electric Power Stations	Cloth	2.50
Electrical Railroading	Lea.	3.50

NOTE.—New Books and Revised Editions are marked*

DRAKE'S MECHANICAL BOOKS

*Title	Style	Price
Automobile Books		
Brookes' Automobile Handbook	*Lea.	$2.00
Automobile Starting and Lighting	*Lea.	1.50
Automobile Starting and Lighting	*Cloth	1.00
Ford Motor Car and Truck and Tractor Attachments	*Lea.	1.50
Ford Motor Car and Truck and Tractor Attachments	*Cloth	1.00
Automobile Catechism and Repair Manual	*Lea.	1.25
Practical Gas and Oil Engine Handbook	*Lea.	1.50
Practical Gas and Oil Engine Handbook	*Cloth	1.00
Farm Books		
Farm Buildings, With Plans and Descriptions	*Cloth	$1.00
Farm Mechanics	*Cloth	1.00
Traction Farming and Traction Engineering	*Cloth	1.50
Farm Engines and How to Run Them	Cloth	1.00
Shop Practice Books		
20th Cent'y Machine Sh'p Practice	Cloth	$2.00
Practical Mechanical Drawing	Cloth	2.00
Sheet Metal Workers' Manual	*Lea.	2.00
Essential of Sheet Metal Work and Pattern Drafting	*Cloth	1.50
Oxy-Acetylene Welding and Cutting	*Lea.	1.50
Oxy-Acetylene Welding and Cutting	*Cloth	1.00
20th Century Toolsmith and Steelworker	Cloth	1.50
Pattern Making and Foundry Practice	Lea.	1.50
Modern Blacksmithing	Cloth	1.00

NOTE.—New Books and Revised Editions are marked*

DRAKE'S MECHANICAL BOOKS

*Title	Style	Price

Steam Engineering Books

Swingle's Handbook for Steam Engineers and Electricians....	*Lea.	$3.00
Steam Boilers, Construction, Care and Operation	*Lea.	2.00
Complete Examination Questions and Answers for Marine and Stationary Engineers	*Lea.	2.00
Swingle's Catechism of Steam, Gas and Electrical Engineering.	*Lea.	1.50
The Steam Turbine, Its Care and Operation	Cloth	1.00
Calculation of Horse Power Made Easy	Cloth	.75

Railroad Books

Modern Locomotive Engineering.	*Lea.	$3.00
Locomotive Fireman's Boiler Instructor	*Lea.	1.50
Locomotive Engine Breakdowns and How to Repair Them.....	*Lea.	1.50
Operation of Trains and Station Work	*Lea.	2.00
Construction and Maintenance of Railway Roadbed and Track...	Lea.	2.00
First, Second and Third Year Standard Examination Questions and Answers for Locomotive Firemen	*Lea.	2.00
Complete Air Brake Examination Questions and Answers.....	*Lea.	2.00
Westinghouse Air Brake System.	Cloth	2.00
New York Air Brake System....	Cloth	2.00
Walschaert Valve Gear Breakdowns	Cloth	1.00

NOTE.—New Books and Revised Editions are marked*